

MY MELODY

by Cecil R



My Melody

By Cecil R

Free Edition from www.obooko.com

© Copyright 2011 Cecil R

Published by the author. Distributed worldwide by obooko

This edition is available free of charge exclusively to obooko members for evaluation purposes: it may be amended and updated at any time by the author so please visit www.obooko.com to ensure you have the latest edition.

Although free of charge, this work remains protected by Copyright and must not be sold in digital or printed form.

For more free e-books and to list your fiction or non-fiction book for free publication, please visit www.obooko.com

This work is a work of fiction. All the characters are fictional and any similarity to persons living or dead are purely coincidental. All events depicted are purely fictional and are used to advance the narrative. The fictional composites set out in the work are not meant to disparage any individual, organization or set of beliefs.

This book is dedicated to the memory of:

THERESA

AND

MARELIZE

Cecil R

My Melody

Professor Ces T. Rauts is head of the breast cancer research at the local university. Due to his policy of never ever examining a woman without a another woman being present he is always accompanied by his professional nurse Zen Mafu.

Breast International a international organization awarded research funds to Prof. That leads to the appointment of four research assistants who Prof has to train in breast research.

The whole department gets involved in the life of Melody Reuters who is 32 year old and is 4 months pregnant when she is diagnosed with Stage III breast cancer. Prof has to give Melody the choice that she must decide whether to have treatment and abort the baby or not receive treatment resulting in the fact that the baby will live but that the breast cancer will kill her. Melody says that she had lived for 32 years while her baby has not lived and so she refuses treatment.

The story follows all the members of the breast cancer research unit as they interact with Melody and what effect her situation had on the lives of all the members. This also allows the members to examine their own ideas about their breasts and their reaction to the task and function that they have to carry out. A story that makes one examine their own reaction when presented with difficult choices.

Chapter 1

He stopped in front of the glass door that stated ***Professor Ces T. Rauts Breast Cancer Specialist***. As he looked at the sign he, as he did every day when he walked into his consulting rooms, lifted his eyes to heaven and said, "Thank you. Lord."

On entering the consulting rooms he was immediately greeted by his receptionist Phyllis and the filing and accounts clerk, Cherie. He walked up to the counter and as he did every morning said, "I am sorry that I am not here if there are any problems. Please send all problems for my attention to the South Pole and when I get there I will pay attention to them."

A smiling Phyllis answered, "I have already sent a copy of the note I sent to the Medical Association Meeting this evening stating that due to circumstances beyond your control you will not be attending the meeting and tending your apologies. Then there is also a reminder that you have to go to the PTA meeting at Saxon Primary at 18.30. I also added a note from Marian says please do not miss the meeting as twins teacher, Mrs. Julie Bain needs to talk to you about them. Those are the only notes sent to the South Pole for your attention."

Sighing he replied, "I suppose that the twins are driving their teacher bonkers again."

With a giggle Cherie said, "When the Marian brought them here yesterday I asked then who was who. To me they are so identical that I cannot tell them apart. I do not think that they can be separated. I have never seen a pair of twins so identical. Well when I asked who was who they turned to each other and the one said, Are you Aniline or am I Aniline. For about a minute or so they discussed amongst themselves who was Aniline and then turned to

me and the one said that she was sorry but they did not know who was who all they knew was that they were either Aniline or Anilies.”

“Yes,” Prof replied, “That is their latest trick. They love to use it as it drives people mad.”

“They must enjoy doing that,” Cherie said.

“Marian reported that the school try to separate the twins by putting them in separate classes,” Prof said, “But that lasted less than a day.”

“Less than a day, what happened?” Phyllis asked.

“Well it seems as though Mr. Marais the headmaster of Saxon Primary called the twins into the office and told them that he had decided to put them into separate classes. He then said that Aniline was to go to the A class and Anilies was to go to the B class. The twins immediately began to discuss who was who. They tried to decide who was who. Apparently Mr. Marais blew his top and then pointed to the one twin and said that she must go to the A class and said that the other must go to the B class. The twins were thrilled and left Mr. Marais office immediately. Then before they had taken five steps they turned and asked Mr. Marais which one must go to which class. He apparently then lost it and yelled at the twins that he did not care which one went to which class but they must get to class.”

Prof paused and then continued, “When the bell rung for break the teachers went to the staff room where Mr. Marais mentioned his confrontation with the twins. During the discussion that followed it emerged that the twins had not been in any classes after Mr. Marais summonsed them. A search was started for the twins and they were found sitting in the toilet. When confronted they explained that they did not know what to do. They said that Mr. Marais had changed his mind as to who had to go where. At one

moment he had said that the one twin must go to the A class and then a few breaths later changed and said that the same twin had to go to the B class. When they queried his action he had not reacted except to yell at them and tell them that he did not care where they went.”

With a long sigh Prof continued and said, “At that Mr. Marais told the twins to follow him and placed the one twin in class A and the other in class B. That was that until the next break time. When classes started again after break the twins were in the same class. Off to Mr. Marais they went. He blew and said that they were to go to detention that afternoon. With that the twins jumped up and down and clapped. They then ran up to him and hugged him thanking him. When Mr. Marais calmed them down they told him that they loved him as by putting them in detention they would be able to go home later than the normal time and therefore would not have to weed the cactus garden. They said that that was the task that Auntie Marian had given them to do that afternoon. The one twin then asked that if they were to stay together would he please put them in detention every day so that they never had to weed the cactus garden. At that Mr. Marais kicked them out of the office telling them to go to class. They went to class together and they are still in class together.”

“They seem to be very clever,” Phyllis commented.

“That is there problem,” Prof said, “They are too clever for their own good.”

“I must admit that I am very impressed at the way that your sister Marian has taken charge of the children. I would think that that is a blessing.” Phyllis said.

“It has not been easy. Since our partners were killed in the bus accident both of us have had to adapt,” Prof said in a quiet voice adding, “I am ever so grateful that my sister, Marian, or the Blonde as I sometimes call her having given

her that name while she was still at school, came to my aid. I do not know what I would have done if she did not step in to take Mary-Louse placed. It was so wonderful, after Mary-Louse and Dodd were both killed that she was willing to step up to help me. Strange, we were very close as children and I have said from very young I called her my Blonde. Our parents thought it very funny that I called my sister Blonde but in those days it was a term of affection not a derogatory term. Well enough about naughty twins. Talk to me about today.”

“I have given Zen the daily list and she is all ready for you. How did the operation on Robin Castle go? Just think 18 years old and having breast cancer.”

“Robin’s operation went well. There were no complications,” Prof replied.

“It seems as if breast cancer sufferers are getting younger and younger,” Phyllis said.

“You are so right. The latest stats say 1 in 29 SA women will get breast cancer and that 1 in 10 will have some contact with breast cancer between the age of 20 and 80. Pretty horrifying!”

Prof walked into his office and went directly to the wash basin and washed his hands. As per usual the soap, towel and hand cream were ready for him. He thought back to his meeting with Zen. She had come to see him as she had discovered a lump in her left breast. He had diagnosed her with a benign breast tumour that is made of glandular and fibrous breast tissue called a Fibroadenoma. She has queried the diagnosis convinced that she had breast cancer. To settle her doubt he had sent her for an ultrasound study. The study had confirmed his diagnosis.

He smiled as he remembered her reaction when he told her that he was going to manipulate the Fibroadenoma and break it into smaller pieces so that it could be reabsorbed

into the body. She had a pair of small breasts that sat high on her chest with small nipples and areola. She had sat quite still whilst he did the manipulation and only reacted when he told her that she was to go braless for at least 6 weeks. That had brought about an immediate reaction from Zen who had flatly refused to even consider going braless.

During the following discussion he found out that she was a professional registered nurse who specialized in community health working at an inner-city clinic. On discovering that information he challenged her to go and read up about the Fibroadenoma and the manipulation and braless cure. Zen immediately accepted his challenge. He made an appointment to see her 10 days later to discuss her findings telling her that that was not to be a consultation but rather a discussion on breasts between two health professionals.

During that period Tonia, his nurse assistant, who worked with him, tendered her resignation. Her husband had been transferred to another town. Tonia had requested that she be released early as she wanted to pack and move to get the children settled in the new school. Prof had agreed on condition that he was able to find someone to take her place.

Prof had been surprised when Zen arrived for her appointment. As he later told Marian he had been gum-smacked when Zen walked into the consulting room. She had greeted him and nodded at Tonia then she had walked up to that client's chair. Put her handbag on the chair and without seeming to stop she had pulled off the T-shirt and camisole that she was wearing and stood facing him topless and braless. He still remembered her words as she spoke to him saying, "Professor as you can see I am braless. You win. I did as you asked. I went and read up all about Fibroadenoma and the manipulation and braless cure. You

were correct and I had to eat humble pie. Because of that fact I punished myself and went braless for a day. Since then I have not worn a bra and never ever will wear one again. I cannot tell you what freedom I experience going braless.”

He and Zen had then discussed her findings and he found that she had a bright and fast mind. He was surprised to note that she had done some intensive reading on breasts and breast conditions. As they discussed her reading he found that he enjoyed the occasion to the fullest. After about half an hour he suddenly came to the realization that Zen was sitting talking to him dressed only in her jeans and shoes. She had not put on her top after she had showed him that she was braless. When he had mentioned that fact and apologised for not telling her to get dressed she had laughed saying that she had forgotten that she was topless adding that she enjoyed being topless and braless.

Zen stood up and just as she was going to get dressed he had suggested that as she was braless that he be allowed to check the Fibroadenoma. On hearing his comment Tonia, who had sat on a chair in the background got up and brought him what she called a Booby Tray. It was a tray that consisted of a towel, a tape measure, a micrometer, a pair of sterile gloves, swabs and gauze, Tegaderm to stick the dressings to the skin, and two empty kidney dishes.

On examination of Zen’s breast he found that the Fibroadenoma had just about disappeared. In the ensuing discussion Zen had mentioned that she would love to work with breast cancer. Without thinking he had told her to submit her CV and to present herself for a interview some 4 days later.

At the interview, which he conducted, with Phyllis and Tonia in attendance he had found that Zen was no fool and

that she had read up on all aspects of breast conditions before coming for the interview.

He took time to explain to Zen that he refused to examine a woman without a nurse present. He said that if he was alone with a woman and her breasts and she spread stories about him then he would not have a leg to stand on.

After the interview, both Phyllis and Tonia recommended that Zen be appointed. Their reaction supported his idea that she was the person for the job. When offered the position Zen had accepted immediately and on joining him they had developed a wonderful working relationship.

As he seated himself behind his desk Zen walked into the office carrying a number of Booby Trays and greeted him. She then inquired about Robin Castle operation. Prof gave her a pinpoint description indicating that the operation went well and stated that if no complications set in Robin would recover fully. He went on to say that the saving grace with Robin was her attitude.

Zen commented saying, "I will always remember Robin's response to you when you informed her that she had Stage III breast cancer. Do you remember Prof she just looked at you nodded her head and then said something like OK Professor how the hell do we kick this things arse. Then you told her that she would have to lose both breasts and all she said well let's get on with it and then get on living adding that she was not going to let the breast cancer kill her."

"Yes I remember. Robin is a wonderful young girl," Prof said. He paused then said, "Well this morning went off well; let's hope the rest of the day goes that same way. OK let's get this day started. Who's first? Let's see what this folder says. Mrs Melody Reuters 32, married to David, referred by Doctor Antony Fallen. She is 4 months

Cecil R

pregnant and has found a lump in each breast. Fallen reckons that it is cancer. Well we will see.”

Prof looked up and nodded his head and saw Zen walk out of the office to call the client. As he watched her walk away he thought that she was worth her weight in gold.

Chapter 2

Prof looked up as Zen and Mrs Melody Reuters walked into the office. As Mrs Melody Reuters approached him he took an opportunity to check her out. She was young looking and very neatly dressed in a light blue slack suit wearing a reddish button-up blouse. He thought that she looked frightened but thought that that was a normal feeling. As usual he looked at her breasts and saw that she carried her breasts high and well. They were about a size 38 and he noted the outline of her bra through her clothes. As he did so he realized that she was wearing a bra that was too small for her breasts and that she most likely experienced bra discomfort.

Zen led the client up to the desk and then said, “Prof please meet Mrs Melody Reuters. This is her first visit to us.”

“Hello Mrs Reuters. Thank you for coming to see us” Prof said adding, “Please have a seat.”

After she was seated Prof began to talk to her about all aspects of her life. He asked her where she work? What her hobbies were? Did she enjoy her job as a teacher? What sport did she train? At the end of the questions Prof had built up a good picture of who Mrs Melody Reuters was.

She was 32 years old and had got married at 21 to David. She and David were both teachers and taught at the Brinson Senior Secondary High School. Both she and David had master’s degrees in Education and were seriously thinking of doing their doctorates in the near future. She taught history and he taught geography to grades 10 to 12. She enjoyed teaching and coached the second netball team at school. Her hobby was collecting ethnic post cards specializing it traditional clothing. She was 4 months pregnant and that was reaching a dream for her. Since her

wedding she had tried everything to fall pregnant and she was over the moon that after 11 years she was finally pregnant. She said that she was enjoying being pregnant. When he questioned her if she ever examined her breasts on a regular basis he got a very negative reaction. She indicated that she knew what self breast examination was but did not do it.

Prof got the idea that she talked well but was hesitant with her answers. He hoped that he could get her to relax before he examined her.

He got a vivid smile out of her when he said, “Mrs Reuters I am sure you are saying to yourself that I thought that I was here to get my breasts checked but he talks about everything else except the breasts. Well now it is that time that I talk to you about your breasts. Please tell me why you came here?”

Mrs Reuters seemed to hesitate and then softly said, “Some five months ago I was showering when I felt a lump in my right boob. It was small and I did not worry as I thought that it would go away. Every now and again after that I sort of felt the lump but it did not worry me in the least. Then some months later I felt a second lump in my left boob. The lumps did not worry me at all until about a month ago when I discovered that they were beginning to get bigger. Then last week I began to experience pain around the lumps so I thought that I would ask my GP Doctor Antony Fallen to check them out. He saw me yesterday afternoon and after examining my boobs suggested that I come to talk to you about the lumps immediately. Well I came and now I am here.”

“Now it is time for me to look at the lumps,” Prof said, “Please go with Zen to the screens over there and strip to your panties and put on one of the gowns that Zen will show you. Please note that Zen is a qualified professional

nurse who, like me, has specialized in breast conditions. She will always be with me. I have the policy of never being alone with a patient when I work with breasts.”

Showing insight Melody had smiled and said, “I would imagine that working with boobs daily can lead some women to want to try to have more than their boobs touched.”

“Glad to find a woman who understands,” Prof commented with a weary smile.

Zen led a smiling Mrs Reuters away to lead her behind a Chinese screen. Mrs Reuters was surprised when she saw the area behind the screen. It appeared to be a beautiful semi-bedroom. There was a dressing table, two straight back chairs, an open wardrobe with four different colour gowns hanging on hangers as well as empty hangers ready to receive clothes. On the floor a soft thick ply carpet lay.

“Mrs. Reuters two things,” Zen said, “Through that door is a toilet. On the table in the toilet you will find a glass beaker, please go there and pass urine collecting some of the urine in the beaker. Leave the urine sample on the table. They you must please strip out of all your clothing except panties and then dress in one of the gowns and return to Prof. Please come to him barefoot,” Zen said. “If you need me please do not hesitate I am just around the corner.” With that Zen nodded at Mrs. Reuters and left her alone.

Mrs Reuters stood for a moment looking around and then followed Zen request to supply a urine sample. On return to the screened room she stood in front of the wardrobe and looked at the gowns. They all appeared to be the same design but were different colours, apricot, light green, sea blue and white. As she undressed she found herself thinking, ‘So now he wants to see my boobs. The gown at least gives one some privacy so I don’t have to

flout my boobs for him. I suppose that he see a lot of boobs every day. I would think that he must be the envy of many men. I know that David would give his eye teeth to work with and touch boobs all day long. I wonder what he is thinking as he looks at my boobs. They are round and biggish but they are all I have got. Oh! Hell he is going to touch them. I hope his hands are warm because if they are cold then my nipples will jump to attention and hit him in the eye. Then he will not be able to see my boobs at all.'

With a giggle she began to undress. After she had pulled on the apricot coloured gown on over her full panties and hung her clothes up in the wardrobe she walked towards Prof who was busy writing in a file. As she walked towards him she found herself thinking, 'Here we go. At last my boobs are going to get examined. Prof was not surprised when I tell him that I first felt them when I was showering about five months ago. How can I tell him why I waited so long after finding them before going to visit Dr. Fallen? I was scared, just like I am now. What if it is cancer? What if he wants to cut my boobs off? How will I feed my baby?'

Prof, looking at her as she came towards him, could not help but think that although she was educated with a master's degree she was stupid. She had discovered the lumps five months ago and only now comes for help and she is preggies. Well let's see what these lumps say. Maybe it is nothing. We hope.

"Please sit down Mrs. Reuters," Prof said, "Let me explain what is going to happen. I am going to ask you to get up and go and stand in front of that full length mirror on the other side of the room. There Zen will take your gown and I will examine your breasts. I am going to start by a looking at them by making you face me. I will do so with your arms at your side, then with your arms

outstretched and thirdly with your arms above your head. Then you will return your arms to your sides and I will then undertake a touch examination. That means that I going to use my fingertips and examine each breast from your collar bone to the bottom of your breasts and from the centre of the cleavage to under the armpits. After I have undertaken the standing examination I am going to repeat the examination with you lying on the examination couch. Then I will take a blood sample for a blood test. Then you can go and get dresses. After that I will send you to Dr. Dylan Maxton the radiologist who is two doors down the passage. He will take a few X-rays and then do breasts scans. After that you will come back here tomorrow and we will see what is potting and discuss the way forward.”

Zen waited for Prof to finish before she handed him a slip of paper containing the results of Mrs. Reuters urine test. He glanced at it noting that her white blood cell count was higher than normal, and then put it down in top of her file. Looking at her he said, “Well we are ready. Please stand up and move to the mirror. The slip your gown off and hand it to Zen. Thank you.”

Mrs Reuters did as Prof requested and Zen came and stood next to her and as she slipped the gown off took it from her and folded it and put it over a chair. As she took off her gown Prof noted that Mrs. Reuters was wearing a flesh coloured full panties. Looking at her breasts he noted that they were big and round like a big balloon that filled her chest. Her nipples are well set and the areola around the nipple is nicely placed pointing slightly outwards. Both the nipple and the areola are nearly black in colour. Prof saw that they formed a beautiful contrast with the skin of her breasts.

Prof approached her and carried out the examination in detail as he had explained to her. She found herself sort

of detached from what was happening and herself thinking, 'Well here we go. He is looking at them as if he is looking right into the soul of my boobs. Funny it is not sexy or anything. It feels normal. But I suppose it is because he is a doctor and I am a patient. It is different when David looks at my boobs. He has another look on his face. It is strange to think of a man looking at my boobs and not being excited by the action. When David looks at them or cups them I kind of feel excited but here it is nothing. It is quite strange. Professor's face does not show a thing. I heard that he is widower his wife apparently having been killed in a bus smash. Doctor Antony Fallen said that he had a number of children, six I think Doctor Fallen said. Doctor Fallen also said that his sister now looked after the children. Gossip has it that her husband was also killed in the bus smash.

As per usual while Prof was examining the breasts he was taking in all aspects of the examination which he would later record on her file in detail. He noted that they are well situated and their size suits her body type. It is true that very few women have the wrong size breasts. He was glad that he was not into cosmetic breast surgery. Depending on the fashion women will want big breasts, small breasts and in between breasts. Her nipples are well set and the areola around the nipple is nicely placed and displays a good very dark colour. Both the nipple and the areola are nearly black in colour. As he looked at her breasts he automatically took in that the right breast was slightly larger than the left. He knew that that was a normal occurrence as 99% of all women had one breast larger than the other. He thought that he better find these lumps that she is talking about. With a smile he thought that he must show that he was warm his hands up by rubbing them together. Thinking how strange it was that

the action of rubbing one's hands together before touching the breasts seemed to calm the woman down.

Prof stepped closer to the client examined her breasts thinking, 'There we are ready. Let's see. The breast texture is normal and the movement is normal. Let's start with the left breast. There it is! The lump, big, hard and not movable. Oops that is not so good. Let's check the rest out. She is ticklish. The lump is definitely there so let's check the rest of the breast carefully.'

While Professor was examining her breasts Mrs. Reuters found herself thinking, 'His hands are so soft. They are like a butterfly touching my boobs. I have never felt anyone touch my boobs so softly. Strange it means nothing that he is touching my boobs, it is not a sexual feeling, just a feeling of reassurance and lightness. I wonder how his hand must touch when he is busy doing other things. Ouch that was sore. He is touching the lump. He has found it I wonder what he thinks of it. Strange he has left it and moved away. Maybe he thinks that it is not a problem as he has ignored the lump. He is touching every part of my boobs and even in my armpits, that's ticklish. Fancy him rolling my nipple between his thumb and finger. David loves to do that but this is different. When David rubs my nipple like that a kind of electric shock goes into me. The Professor does it and bang nothing. No electricity not anything. I suppose that is because he is the Professor and David is my lover.'

As Prof completed the examination he thought, 'I can't feel a thing, except the lumps. I will take the blood for tests then send her off for X-rays, and a chest scan.'

Zen then stepped closer and helped Mrs Reuters to put the gown on. While Zen was assisting her, she forced herself to concentrate on what Professor was saying and heard him say, "Thank you Mrs Reuters for being so easy to

examine but it is now time that you go for the tests that we talked about earlier. You need not worry about the tests they are not painful, X-rays, and a chest scan. These tests are just precautionary just to make sure what is going on, if anything, in the breasts.”

After that Zen led Mrs Reuters behind the screen and let her change out of the gown into her clothes. After she had changed Zen led her back to go and sit in front of the Professor who said, “After you have had the tests you can go home. When you leave this office Zen will take you to Phyllis who will make an appointment for you to see me tomorrow afternoon then we can discuss the findings.”

Prof paused then continued saying, “Mrs Reuters I have a request that I would like you to carry out before you come to see me tomorrow afternoon. When you wake up tomorrow morning and get dressed please do not put your bra on. I would ask you to go braless until after you have seen me.” Noting that Mrs Reuters was going to say something Prof quickly added, “Please understand that I need to see the natural hang of your breast and if you have not worn a bra for a time then your breasts will be in their natural position and it will make it easier to examine. Remember a bra forces the breast into an unnatural position.”

Mrs Reuters stared at the Professor and then said, “That will be difficult. I have always worn a bra since I was young. But well they say there is a first time for everything.”

Zen stepped up to Mrs Reuters and touching her on the shoulder said, “You will find going braless is an exhilaration experience. Please come with me so I can take you to make your appointment for tomorrow afternoon then take you to Dr. Dylan Maxton the radiologist.

As Mrs Reuters left the office Prof found himself

thinking, 'This is not a nice one. I will have to examine the situation carefully as there is the pregnancy to keep in mind. I am surprised that she waited so long before seeking help. If she had come when she first found the lumps then she would be OK but now I doubt it. The fact that she has come for help is a plus I suppose. One thing that I was surprised about was how she was on the defensive when I questioned her about the self-breast examination. She knew what it is and sort of indicated that she knew how to do it yet did not admit to not doing it. I wish that there was a law that forced every woman of this beautiful country to do the self breast examination every month without exception. If one could get that right then I am sure that the breast cancer death rate will drop by some 60% but well we will never ever know. If only I could find a way to teach women to take their breasts seriously. I suppose most women have been so indoctrinated by men that breasts are sexual objects. Ms. Reuters was unhappy when I asked her not to wear a bra tomorrow. She was very suspicious as to my reason that I needed to see the natural hang of her breasts. I suppose we will see if she will carry out my instructions or not. Well what next? I am sure Zen will have the next patient along in a matter of time

Chapter 3

Before Prof started his day in consultation he has visited Robin Castle in the hospital and discovered that she was progressing well. He had to smile at her at her comment that she had decided not to have breast reconstruction. She had told him that her mother had brought her a brochure from Reach for Recovery an organization that aids and assists woman who have been diagnosed with breast cancer. Excitedly she showed him a number of bras with prosthesis breasts attached. Giggling she said that she was going to purchase a number of the bras with different size breasts attached. That meant when she got dressed she could decide what size breast she wanted to have for the day. As he listened to her he was thankful that she was able to accept the fact that cancer had stolen her breasts and sent a silent prayer up that they had removed all the cancer from her body. He knew that she still had a tough road ahead with chemotherapy and radiation.

Walking away from her he considered what her chance of total recovery from the breast cancer was. He knew that as far as he was concerned he had removed all the cancer from her breasts and there was no sign of any cancer spread into her body. To himself he had to admit that Robin was a wonderful girl and remembered when he had told her that she had breast cancer she has stared at him and then asked, "Professor how do we beat this thing. I am not going to let it kill me." Just those words had shown Prof that Robin was out to beat the disease.

When Prof walked into the office he became

immediately aware of an excited atmosphere in the office. Both Phyllis and Cherie seemed to be wound up and excited. As he walked towards the girls he wondered what was up. After greeting both of them he asked, "So tell me what's up. I would think that both of you have just won a jackpot.

"Not us but you Prof," Phyllis excitedly said

"Wrong," Prof replied, "You both know how I hate gambling. So that is wrong address."

With a smile on her face Phyllis handed Prof an opened letter and said, "Prof may I suggest that you go into your office and sit down behind your desk before you read the letter."

Shrugging his shoulders Prof walked into his office and did as Phyllis suggested. When he greeted, Zen who was waiting for him, he was aware that she was also excited. "What's up with the lot of you?" he asked. "It seems as if you are all waiting to go to an orgy or something. I have never known the lot of you to be so wound up?"

"Read your letter," Zen said.

Glancing down Prof saw the letterhead and immediately froze. With suppressed excitement he had another look at the letterhead and began to read the letter.

Cecil R

BREAST INTERNATIONAL
University of Marking; Unit 23; Maxim
Professor Ces T. Rauts
Breast Cancer Unit
Nuveen University
Brooke

Dear Professor

It is with pleasure that I have to inform you that you have been awarded a research grant by the above institute to carry out research on bras causing breast cancer as well on breast sagging after bra are removed. The award is subjected to the following conditions as set out in the application form.

- The research funding is for five years and can be reallocated
- Research is to be carried out on
 - bras and breast cancer
 - breast sagging after bra are removed
- 3 monthly reports to be tabled with Breast International
- The salaries of 4 research assistants will be paid within the funding range as set out in the application.
- All research data obtained through this research program becomes and remains the property of Breast International.
- Breast International reserves that right to call for a summary of the research at any time
- If Breast International is unhappy with the progress of the research then it will appoint an international auditor to investigate the matter and the verdict of the auditor is final. In the case where an auditor is

My Melody

appointed the cost thereof will be taken from the research grant.

It is trusted that the above conditions will be satisfactory and that they are acceptable.

Funding for the above research projects is from the 1st of the month. The funds will be paid as set out in the research proposal.

If you have any questions please contact me at the above address.

Breast International congratulates you on the award and looks forward to a long and productive research companionship.

Yours

Fat

Professor François Antoine Thompson

CEO Breast International

Prof looked up and saw Zen looking at him with a smile on her face. Seeing him look at her she said, "I am so thrilled. Congratulations. Now you can test your theory that bras can and do cause breast cancer as well as the theory that breasts firm up when a bra is taken away from a woman that has worn a bra." Still smiling she raised her voice and loudly called, "He had not died from the shock you can come."

On hearing Zen call Phyllis and Cherie came hurrying into the office and both expressed their congratulations on him being awarded the research award.

Prof looked at the three girls and said, "I want to warn

you that we are going into a whole different direction from now on. The first thing we will have to do is to get the lecture room that we do not use up and running. Phyllis it needs to be turned into an office with desks etc. Each girl will need a laptop for which I budgeted and all other items to do research. Please draw up the needs and then give it to me so that I can set the wheels in motion to obtain all the items. OK?”

“Not a problem! Prof,” Phyllis stated. “The stores have issued an office list. The list sets out all needed to get an office going from nothing up. I will use that as a basis.”

“Well Phyllis that is your problem. How and what you do is your problem,” Prof replied.

He then said, “Now you three. I need four researchers, one White, one Coloured, one Indian and a Black girl. We can advertise but I would rather get girls that you know. I am sure that you all can think of someone who will be able to fit in.

“Prof what should their qualifications be?” Cherie asked.

“First of all they must not be breast shy. They will be working with breasts all the time so they cannot be breast shy. With regards to educational qualifications that is not a deciding factor but they must at least have a matric. They must have people skills and be able to converse well. Apart from that it is not much of a problem. I am sure that between the three of you we should be able to find the right girls. I need them to start asap.”

Prof I want to make a suggestion,” Phyllis said.

“Let’s hear,” Prof replied.

“I am sure that if we really went out of our way we could maybe find suitable girls. But I would like to suggest that you talk to Pastor David Dillon of the Highway Community Church. The church has branches in all the

areas serving people from the race groups which we need a girl. I would suggest that you go and see him and get his take on your idea and then let him decide if he will help you.” Phyllis said.

“I think that that is a good idea,” Zen said.

“I second the idea,” Cherie said. “That way we cannot be held responsible if someone messes up.”

“Right let’s try that method,” Prof commented. “Phyllis please make the appointment for me to see the pastor. From listening too you I get the impression that you know the pastor. So when you make the appointment please tell him why I want to see him. If necessary you can tell him about the Breasts International award and about the bra and breast cancer and breast sagging research.”

“Will do Prof, I will come back to you as soon as I have made the appointment.”

“Well the next few months are going to be exciting. We are going to develop from a four man or shall I say a one man and three girl team to a one man and seven girl team. God help me! Well that is all we can do now so let’s get the day going. I suppose that I will find out how true the saying, God made man too perfect therefore he made woman,” Prof stated.

Giggling, Phyllis and Cherie left the office. As they exited Zen handed Prof an X-ray result sheet and a blood report. Looking at them Prof noted that they both belonged to Mrs. Melody Reuters. As he noted the results he realized that his worse fears were true. Looking at Zen he asked, “Did you look at these?”

Nodding her head Zen replied saying, “I did and it is a mess. I am going to be an interesting spectator as to how you are going to handle it. Whatever way she chooses you are going to lose. This is a lose-lose situation.”

“That is no maybe,” Prof replied. “Wait let’s see today’s

patients. Maybe if we leave it alone it may disappear and Mrs. Reuters will be miraculously cured.”

“Fat chance of that occurring,” Zen stated. “Talking about fat, it was strange to me that the letter from Breast International was signed fat.”

“I was also struck the first time that I saw that. It was only after I had a good look at the situation that I realized that he was using the letters of his name. He is François Antoine Thompson. So if one takes the first letters of his name then one lands up with F...A...T That is fat, hence his signature.”

“Clever,” Zen stated. “Wait let me get our first client for the day.”

Just after three that afternoon Zen brought Mrs. Melody Reuters into the consulting room. Prof got up and greeted her and invited her to take a seat. As she sat he noted that Zen moved to stand near her.

“Mrs. Reuters I need to check your breasts once again before we discuss what we have found. So please go with Zen. You know the ropes. Give some urine, undress to panties and then dress in a gown and return. I am just going to check the lumps again.”

Zen touched Mrs. Reuters on the shoulder and she followed her to disappear behind the screen. When she returned she was dressed in the yellow gown. Prof led her to stand in front of the examination couch and Zen helped her slip the gown off. She stood straight looking at him with large eyes. In passing Prof noted that she was wearing yellow tango panties.

“Mrs. Reuters,” Prof addressing her said, “I appreciate it that you have been braless since you got dressed this morning. I know that you were not happy with me yesterday when I asked you to go braless therefore I am grateful that you did so. That action allows me to see your

breasts in their natural beauty and not as they have been forced into an unnatural position by a bra.”

“How do you know that I was not wearing a bra? Was it so obvious when I walked towards you?” Mrs. Reuters asked with the anxiety showing in her voice.

“I honestly cannot say that I did not know that you were not wearing a bra,” Prof stated adding, “I noted it now when you stood in front of me. There are no bra strap marks on your body. So that told me no bra today.”

“Oh! So you could not see that I was braless when I walked towards you?” Mrs. Reuters asked.

“Tell me Mrs. Reuters do you know if I am wearing a bra or not?” Zen asked.

Prof noted that Mrs. Reuters took a long hard look at Zen and then she said, “I do not know if you are wearing a bra or not. I think that you are. Yes you must be wearing one. Your breasts are sitting to perfect on your body not to be wearing one.”

Without a word Zen loosened the top buttons of her white uniform and moved the edges wider to display the rounding of her breasts proving that she was not wearing a bra.

“I never knew that you were braless,” Mrs. Reuters stated.

“It is exactly the same in your case. People will not know and in actual fact most people will not care a damn if you are wearing a bra or not,” Zen stated as she buttoned her uniform up.

“Well let’s do this,” Prof said.

Looking at her Prof asked her to keep her arms at her sides, then lift them above her head, then hold them parallel to the ground. He could discern no major changes in the breast action except that her breasts were more relaxed than the previous day. One thing that he did notice

was that the different in size between the left and right breast was less noticeable than on the previous day. He put that down to the fact that the breasts had hung free for the day.

After performing the visual examination he got Mrs. Reuters to lie down on the examination table and undertook a detailed examination of both breasts. He checked to make sure that there were no other lumps. After that he concentrated on the two identified lumps tracing, positioning, and finding the edges. As he did so he realized that the X-rays, breast scan and the blood results all confirmed what he was feeling. Mrs. Reuters had Stage III breast cancer.

On completion of the examination he told her that she could go and get dressed and then they had to talk.

After Mrs. Reuters had got dressed she came and sat opposite Prof and looked expectantly at him. Without hesitation Prof began to speak saying, "Mrs. Reuters in cases like this I have learnt not to dress what I have to say in words that are non meaning. I am sorry to have to tell you that you are suffering from Stage III breast cancer. At this stage I am not going to talk about the stages of breast cancer. You will have to make a decision about treatment but the decision cannot be yours alone. Could you tell me where your husband will be at this time?"

At first Mrs. Reuters just stare at Prof and then as if she had just woken up said, "Professor, David will be at school. He is coaching soccer."

"Is it possible to get hold of him? I would like him to come to be with you as we discuss the way ahead," Prof inquired.

"I have his cell number," Melody said. "Is it very bad?"

"Mrs. Reuters I am not willing to lie to you. Yes, you are very ill. But let's get David here then we can decide

where we go from here. Can I ask for his number please,” Prof requested.

Prof dialled the number that Mrs. Reuters supplied and when a male voice answered made sure that he was talking to Mr. David Reuters. He then introduced himself and requested that he please come to his office as soon as possible as he wanted to talk about Mrs. Reuters’s breast condition. Prof was very thankful that Mr. Reuters only reaction was to say, “Professor I am on my way. I will see you now. Please tell Melody to hang in there.” With that he disconnected the cell.

Prof turned to Mrs. Reuters and said, “You have quite a man. He is on his way. Please go with Zen to the waiting room. There are no other clients there and you and Zen can wait there. Zen will get you a cup of tea or coffee. When your husband comes we will all sit together and decide what to do. Thank you Zen.”

He watched Zen lead Mrs. Reuters out of the office to the waiting room. As he sat and wrote up a report on Mrs. Reuters file he found himself wishing that he had another job. Something like a tramp or something like that, something where he had no responsibility at all.

To take his mind off the present situation he thought back to the visit to the Mrs. Julie Bain a teacher at Saxon Primary in whose class the twins are. She had sent a message asking that Prof come and see her about the twins. Against Marian advice he had taken the twins with telling her that if the teacher wanted to talk about the twins he wanted them to hear what her problem was. On arriving at the school they found that the teacher was waiting for them. She was unhappy that the twins were with Prof so he sent them out of the classroom telling then that he would call them in after they had had their discussion with the teacher.

After the twins left Mrs. Bain she said, "I am sure that the twins are copying during class tests. They hand in identical papers word for word and even have the same spelling mistakes. I have tried to catch them but have not succeeded."

"Excuse me Mrs. Bain do the twins sit together during the tests?" Prof asked.

"For yesterdays test I made the one sit in front of the class and the other at the back of the class but their results were exactly the same. There is no way that they can do that except to crook!" Mrs. Bain forcefully said.

"Mrs Bain I would like to carry out a test. Do you have some work that you did today that you can use to test the twins on?" Prof asked.

"Yes of course," Mrs Bain replied.

At that Prof called the twins into the class and without saying a word sat the one twin down in the front desk and the other in a desk in the back row as far as possible from the other twin. He then said, "Mrs Bain wants to show us something. I am going to give you each a paper and a pencil. Mrs Bain will ask you a question on some work you did today. You must answer the question to the best of your ability. Please put your correct named on the paper. When you have finished answering the questions stand up next to your bench."

He then handed the girls each a piece of paper and a pencil and Mrs Bain asked a question about water and why

hands must be washed. The twins immediately began to write under the watchful eyes of the three adults. At exactly the same moment the twins stood up next to their benches and as one they together said, "I am finished."

Prof collected the papers and handing them to Mrs Bain asking her to mark the papers.

In silence Mrs Bain marked the papers and afterwards said, "I cannot believe this. This is impossible. There must be something going on here." Turning to Prof she said, "Professor please look at this."

Prof and Marian went to her desk and looked at the answer sheets of the twins. Prof immediately noted that the writing was identical. On further examination he saw that each paper had finished on the second last line of the page. He took in that Mrs Bain had marked two spelling mistakes on each page. The words were in the identical place and were spelt exactly the same.

Prof turned to Mrs Bain and asked, "Mrs Bain is there any way that the twins could have copied tonight?"

"No!" Mrs Bain replied. "Yet their answers are identically down to the spelling mistakes. I do not know how they do it. They are the top learners in class and are head and shoulders above all the other children yet they do everything together. As I look at this they even seem to think together."

Prof looked at the twins who were standing at the back of the class together and asked, "Please realize that the next question is serious, so no nonsense please. Can you

tell which of you wrote which paper?”

Prof observed the twins look at each other and then watched as they walked to Mrs Bain desk. Without a word they each reached out and picked up a piece of paper. Then in unison they said, “We do know who wrote what.”

“Thanks girls. Go and wait for us in the passage,” Prof said.

“Mrs Bain, do you still think that we cheated?” One of the twins asked.

“No I know that you did not cheat,” Mrs Bain said. “I do not know how you two do everything together.”

“Mrs Bain we just keep our brains locked in to each other,” the one twin replied.

“Yes our brains are locked in,” the other twin said.

With that the twins turned in unison and walked out of the classroom.

“Please Professor and Mrs. Rauts forgive my mistrust. To me there was no way that the twins could be so exact in everything even answering a test. Thank you Professor for showing me that the twins although different are above board.”

“I am very glad that I am not a teacher to mistrust children.” Prof began then added, “Mrs Bain the lady at my side is my sister, Marian, who is helping me with the children. My wife and her husband were killed in a bus

accident on the way to a congress on Family Unity.”

“I’m sorry,” an embarrassed Mrs Bain said, “I never realized.”

“I suppose if one is only concerned in mistrust then one does not know about the children’s adaptation.” Prof stated.

He was then stopped by Marian, who until then had not said a word, touched his arm and said, “Ces enough. Let’s go or you will make things even more difficult for the twins. Say good evening to Mrs Bain so we can go.” With that she turned to Mrs Bain and said, “Good evening Mrs Bain. I trust that you are satisfied.” Adding, “Greet Mrs Bain Ces so we can go.”

Prof remembered saying good evening as he followed the Blonde out of the classroom. His reminisces were broken as Zen came into the office and said, “Prof Mr. Reuters is here. Shall I bring them in?”

Taking a deep breath he nodded and stood up to await the arrival of the Reuters. As Mr. Reuters walked in Prof took in the fact that he was tall and well built and had an open face. Mrs. Reuters introduced her husband to Professor and he invited them to have a seat.

Without prelim Prof explained that he had asked Mr. Reuters to be present as he discussed his wife’s case with her. He started by saying that breast cancer could be divided into 4 stages. Stage I was just a tiny area of breast cancer that could be easily treated by removing the cancer. Stage II was when a larger area of breast cancer was

discovered. In this case a larger area of the breast was removed. In Stage III the breast cancer had spread throughout the whole breast and was also found in the lymph nodes under the arm. Treatment in this case was the removal of the breast followed by chemotherapy and radiation of the affected area. Stage IV was when the breast cancer had spread throughout the whole body. There was no successful treatment of this stage.

Having given the background and noting that both Mr. and Mrs. Reuters were listening intently Prof said, “Unfortunately you, Mrs. Reuters have Stage III breast cancer in both your breasts.”

On hearing the news Mrs. Reuters gasped in shock and Mr. Reuters leaned over and gripped her hand and asked, “Professor what does that mean?”

“The usual treatment for Stage III breast cancer is the total removal of all breast tissue followed up by extensive chemotherapy and radiation of the breast area,” Prof said. “Unfortunately in the case of Mrs. Reuters we have a further major problem, her pregnancy. If we treat her with chemotherapy and radiation she will abort the foetus and become sterile.”

Silence followed Prof’s words. Then Mr. Reuters asked, “What will happen if Melody does not take any treatment?”

“If Mrs. Reuters was not to be treated then she would die from the effects of breast cancer but there is a very good chance that the child she is carrying will be born alive,” Prof said.

My Melody

“In other words you are asking me to choose,” Mrs. Reuters said, “You are asking me to choose between taking treatment and aborting the child I am carrying and become sterile or not get treated and then I die but my child lives. Is that correct?”

“I am sorry but that is unfortunately the choice that you have to make,” Prof said. “You two will have to go and make a decision as to what you want to do. Both of you must go with Zen to the waiting room where she will make you a cup of tea. Please sit there for a while before you make your way home. Remember that I am here for you at all times. Please feel free to contact me at any time.” With that he picked up a business card and passed it to Mr. Reuters saying, “My private cell phone is on that card. Please feel free to call that number any time of the day or night. Remember that I am a doctor so I am used to be woken up at night about a case. So please feel free to call at any time.”

Prof hesitated for a moment and then said, “I need to see both of you at 1400 tomorrow to discuss your decision. Remember you can contact me at any time.”

Taking the card Mr. Reuters stood up and pulled his wife up and led her without saying a word out of the office following Zen. Prof was aware of the heavy atmosphere that seemed to hang in his office. Without thinking he took his cell and dialled Marian, his sisters, number. When she answered he quietly told her about the decision that Mrs. Reuters had to make. Take treatment and the baby dies but she lived. Don't take treatment and she dies and the baby lives. Marian listened without a comment and at the end said, “Thank the Lord that I never had to make that

decision.” With a sigh she added, “I suppose because I was infertile I would never be called upon to make that choice so that is a plus.”

After a few words he told her that he would be home later and closed the cell.

He had no idea how long he sat at his desk with his head in his hands thankful that he did not have to make the choice.

Suddenly he was aware of the fact that Zen was standing next to him. He looked up and saw that she had set up a cup of tea down next to him. Without saying a word she placed her hand on his shoulder and gave him a soft squeeze and then walked out of the room.

Prof sat drinking his tea in sips until Zen returned together with Phyllis. They walked up to the desk and Zen said, “They have left for home. They left her car here and I told her that I would deliver it and Phyllis would drive behind me and then take me home.”

“Something different for you Prof,” Phyllis said. “I have made an appointment with Pastor David Dillon at 0900 tomorrow morning about the breast researchers.

Chapter 4

Just before 0900 the following morning Prof stopped his car in the parking area of the Highway Community Church. He got out and followed the pathway indicated by the sign Reception. On entering the reception he was greeted by a young woman who wished him a good morning and inquired if she could help him.

Prof supplied his name and said that he had an appointment with Pastor Dillon. The young woman nodded and picking up the phone dialled and waited a second and that said, “Professor Rauts here to see you Pastor.” She replaced the phone and addressing Prof said, “Pastor will be with you in a second.”

She had scarcely completed the comment when a thickset middle aged man came into the room. He walked up to Prof and introduced himself as David Dillon. He then invited Prof to follow him. As they walked he said, “Phyllis and Zen came to visit me last evening and they gave me the background to your request. I thought about it and then decided that you should talk to all the Pastors about your request. I must say that I am very sympathetic to your research on breast cancer. I lost my mother to that dreadful a few years ago. She suffered something awful towards the end which when it came was a godsend. Anything done to prevent the disease killing our women is very welcome.”

Without a further word he led Prof into an office. As Prof followed him into the office he saw that there were three men sitting in the office. As he entered the men stood up. Pastor Dillon introduced them as Pastor Zola Amos from the Maldon Community Church, Pastor Steve George from the King’s Community Church and Pastor Charles Kridiotis from the Glory Community Church.

After making the introduction Pastor Dillon said, “Gentleman as I told you over the phone Professor Rauts needs our help to find some girls to assist him as research assistants in a research project about breast cancer.” He then turned to Prof and said, “Thank you Professor Rauts.”

Prof stood facing the group of Pastors and explained to them that he had been awarded research funds by Breast International. He went on to say that he needed female research assistants to aid in the research project adding that the girls would be well paid.

“Professor what are the requirements that is needed in the research assistants,” Pastor Charles Kridiotis asked.

Without hesitation Prof said, “First of all the girls must not be breast shy. They will be working with breasts all the time so they cannot be breast shy. With regards to educational qualifications that is not a deciding factor but they must at least have a matric. They must have people skills and be able to converse well. Apart from that it is not much of a problem. I will try to answer any other questions that you may have.”

Pastor Steve George then asked, “Professor I have a young girl that is a very rough diamond by the name of Carline Sinclair. She dresses something different and says what she thinks without a problem and does as she wants. But I think that she will fit in very well and I know that she will find her feet there.”

“Please ask her make an appointment with my receptionist so she can come for an interview,” Prof said, “Gentleman I will be holding interviews for the positions next week. If you can recommend anyone please contact my receptionist about the interviews. Do any of you have questions?”

“How long will the employment contract be for?” Pastor Amos inquired.

“The first contract is for five years and if Breast International renews the contract then it will be for longer,” Prof answered.

“Will all the research be done around here or will the girls ever have to travel to undertake research?” Pastor Dillon asked.

“At present there are no plans for travel but that can change. So I will answer that question by saying yes, no, maybe,” Prof replied.

A period of silence followed then Pastor Charles Kridiotis asked, “Professor I note that you want a girl from each of the major race groups. Does that mean that the chosen girls will only work with girls and women from their own race group?”

“Again the yes/no maybe answer, in some of the research projects the girls will work with their own race groups then the girl may be called upon to work with other race groups. I have mentioned that the girl must have people skills and be able to make contact with all people,” Prof replied.

After answering the question from Pastor Kridiotis a silence followed. Then Pastor Dillon asked, “Any more questions anyone?” When he received no reply he turned to Prof and said, “Thank you Professor for coming to talk to us. I am sure that we will be able to supply you with the girls to be of service to you.”

“Oops!” Pastor George said with a smile in his voice, “David I am sure you do not mean what you say. Fancy us supplying the Professor with girls to be of service to him. That sounds bad.”

With everyone laughing Prof handed to each a business card and took his leave thanking the Pastors for their aid and assistance.

Just after 1500 Zen brought Mr. and Mrs. Reuters into

the office and Prof stood up to greet them. He indicated that they must sit and they took seats opposite him.

Before he could say anything Mrs. Reuters began to talk saying, "Professor the past 24 hours are the worse that I have ever lived through. David and I have discussed the situation from this end to that end. We have not had any sleep since we left here yesterday but we have come to a decision that we believe is the correct one."

Interrupting Mr. Reuters said, "Whatever we decided I was going to lose. I will either lose my wife or my child. I wonder if there is a God out there?"

Mrs. Reuters gripped his arm and then said, "Professor we have decided that I will not receive any treatment. I have lived for thirty two years but my baby has not lived for a day. In any case if I took treatment then the baby will be aborted and that is like having an abortion and I am anti-abortion."

Keeping his voice neutral and without any expression Prof said, "Mrs. Reuters are you sure about your decision. I do apologise that I am talking about the decision but I need to make completely sure that you know what you have decided and that your husband is 100% with you in your decision."

Sitting up straight Mrs. Reuters looked at Prof and replied saying, "Prof you said that if I took treatment then I would lose my baby and become sterile. Then if I did not choose to take treatment then the breast cancer would kill me yet my baby will live. We, David and I have decided on the latter choice. I will forgo treatment so my baby can live."

Prof moved his gaze away from Mrs. Reuters and thinking, 'there is a very brave woman,' asked Mr. Reuters, "Are you fully behind your wife's decision?"

"As difficult as it is I fully support Melody in the

decision, it is her choice. We have been married for 11 years and during that time I have learnt that when Melody make up her mind come hell or high water she stays with the decision. What happens now, Professor?”

“First of all let me say that I am pleased that you both have made a decision. What happens now? Well first of all let me tell you that you will be seeing a lot of me. With your permission I would ask permission to be fully involved in your lives. What does that mean? Well to put it a nutshell. Zen and I will be seeing Mrs. Reuters of a weekly and even on a daily basis. Please note that this consultation is the last that you will receive an account from this office. From now on this office will not be charging for any care and treatment that Mrs. Reuters receives. To that I must add that the care and treatment will not diminish because of that decision. One thing that I want to make plain is that you do not have to make an appointment to see me Mrs. Reuters. All you have to do is arrive here and I will see you after I have finished with the client that I am busy with.”

Prof looked at the Reuters then picking up the phone pressed a button and waited for a second before saying, “Phyllis please come into my office and bring Cherie with you. Thank you.”

It seemed that Prof had just put down the phone when Phyllis and Cherie walked into the office and came and stood next to Zen who was standing at the side of the desk. Addressing them Prof said, “Please note that today’s consultation is the last consultation that is charged for. No more accounts will be processed after this appointment. Then when Mrs. Reuters arrives here she will not have an appointment but you will slot her in immediately after the client that I am busy with. In other words she get what we call push-in treatment.”

Prof turned towards the Reuters's and said, "Push-in treatment is our office word that means to all of us that that client is someone who see me immediately when they arrive here. They just arrive and do not have to have an appointment. This means that that client does not have to wait longer than the time that I use to complete my session with the client that I am busy with then I will see you immediately. Is that clear everyone?"

Prof looked at each person in turn making sure that everyone understood what he was saying. Then looking at the Reuters said, "Mrs. Reuters I need to see you for the next period of time at least twice a week. On a Tuesday and a Friday, you come and I see you."

He then shifted his gaze to Mr. Reuters and said, "Mr. Reuters what I have said to your wife goes for you. When you want to see me you rock-up and the same rule that pertains to your wife will pertain to you. Then something very important, what I am now saying is the most serious comment of this granny with a wet panties speech. Mr. Reuters and Mrs. Reuters you have my private home and cell number. Never ever hesitate to use it. It is a 24 hour number. You have full freedom to use it any time. Do both of you understand that? Mr. Reuters?"

"Yes Professor. Thank you very much." Mr. Reuters replied.

Without waiting Mrs. Reuters said, "Professor thank you for confirming that my decision is the correct one. I know that all of you will be there for me. One thing that did worry me was that I would become a burden to all of you but Professor you have wiped that fear away. Thank you."

Mrs. Reuters seemed to hesitate for a second then added, "I have a request please. As we are going to see each other regularly could I please ask that we drop Mrs.

Reuters and that I become Melody.”

Before anyone could respond Mr. Reuters chipped in and said, “I am David.”

“Thank you Melody and David. That is grand. We all have taken note of that,” Professor said adding, “To your comment about what to call people let me add that this bunch of slave drivers who keeps me in check all call me Prof so you both are invited to join the gang. That is if it meets your approval.”

Reacting David said, “Thank you Prof,”

“Prof, yes that sounds nice,” Melody said, “That has a nice personal ring to it. I can just imagine my girlfriends raising their eyebrows when I tell them that I am going to visit my Prof.” She then pointed to everyone and said, “Prof, Zen, Phyllis, Cherie I think.”

“Yes I am Cherie,” she stated.

“I also have another request,” Melody said, “Please I would ask that no one knows what is wrong with me or of the choice that I have made. I request that the whole thing stays between us. Is that OK?”

“That is no problem,” Phyllis replied. “One thing that you need to know is that Prof insists that when we walk out of the office all data about the clients stays here and that we never ever talk about the who, the what, the where, the why, the how of work. It has nothing to do with anyone else. So on that level you need not worry. We will know about your condition at work but that is where it stays.”

“Thank you all,” Melody stated, “This is the worst nightmare that I have ever had but with all of your help and support David and I will get through it.”

With that she and David stood up. As they did that Zen walked up to Melody and hugged her and then repeated the action with David giving him a peck kiss on the cheek. She was followed by Phyllis and Cherie. After a moment’s

hesitation Prof also walked to Melody and hugged her and shook David's hand.

Reacting to Prof's hug of Melody Zen said, "Prof and I have been working together for about five years and this is the first time I have ever seen him touch a woman except on her breasts. He will examine the woman's breasts but I have never seen him touch anything else of a woman. You are very privileged Melody."

To laughter Prof responded by saying, "Get lost you!"

Chapter 5

One day, just after Melody walked out of the office Zen said, “This is the eight time that we have seen her. She is doing well. Every time I see her I say thank you Lord that I did not have to make that decision.”

Blowing out a long breath Prof said, “Me too. I do not know what Mary-Louse and I would have done if we were ever placed in that position.”

Whilst Zen went to fetch the next client Prof thought about David’s visit the previous afternoon. He had been slipped in between two clients just after 15.00 by Zen who had then disappeared. Without beating about the bush he had thanked Prof for the care and treatment that he was giving his family. He went on to thank Prof for the no-charge treatment saying that he had discovered that the teacher’s medical aid would have run dry during Melody’s last visit. He then thanked Prof for the no charge care saying that he did not understand why he did that but that he was very grateful. Prof had to admit that he was grateful for David’s comments and as he said to Zen it was nice to know that what they did was appreciated.

Prof looked up saw that Zen was bringing Robin Castle into the office. He saw that she looked good and had fully recovered from the double mastectomy that she had had. Looking at her he was sort of surprised to note that she showed a beautiful breast picture. With the exuberance of youth she dropped a case that she was carrying on a chair. Smiling she said, “What do you think of my titties, Professor.” With that she pushed her shoulders back and allowed Prof to see the breasts as seen through her T-shirt. Still smiling she bent and picked up the case, opened it and then to the surprise of both Prof and Zen took out 6 different prostheses bras. It was immediate obvious that each bra had a different size prosthesis breast in it. Still

smiling Robin pulled her T-shirt over her head and then took off the prosthesis breast bra and faced Prof showing him how her chest had recovered. Then she picked up a prosthesis bra that had a pair of large breast enclosed in it and put it on, hooking the bra straps. She then pulled her T-shirt over her head and tucked it into the jeans. It was immediately obvious that she presented a pair of large breasts.

Giggling Robin said, “Just think that I can decide each day what type of girl I want to be. Mom is arranging for me to get some wigs because the chemo is going to cause my hair to fall out. I have been for a fitting and have chosen four wigs including a lovely soft Blonde wig. Professor can you see me parade with these titties and my Blonde shoulder length wig. Man the boys will go gaga and I will be top girl. I am going to enjoy it.”

Then she paused and said, “Professor please do not think badly of me but if I am to die from this cancer I have decided not to sit in a corner and go quietly but I am going to have fun and go out screaming and kicking.”

“Good for you,” Professor said. “I think that you are great. Robin all I can say is go for it. As to what I think of you. Well my sweetheart I think that you are the bravest girl that I have ever known.”

Tears ran down Robin’s cheeks as she stepped forward and wrapped her arms around Prof and hugged him. As he held her in his arms he felt her tears wet his T-shirt. He glanced at Zen and saw that she was also silently crying.

After a while Robin stepped out of the hug and with a tear streaked face looked at him and said, “Thank you for being more than my doctor. I consider you to be my older man lover.”

A brief moment for silence followed and then Robin

blushed began to giggle and said, “Professor that came out wrong. I did not mean what it sounded like it did. I meant to say that I love you as my lover.”

Once again Robin seemed to hear what she said. Then she said, “I am sorry Professor. I did not mean it to come out that way. I do hope that you know what I mean?”

“Don’t worry my love I know what you mean,” Prof said adding, “I must say I am sorry that the words you said were not meant. I have never been a beautiful young girl who has changeable titties as a lover. Quiet a step up for me.”

Robin looked at Prof and then joined a laughing Zen and said, “Yes it is nice to see you in the lover light.”

A while later a semblance of normality returned to the three of them and after undertaking a thorough examination of Robin’s operation wounds and being satisfied with the progress she left the office after blowing a kiss at Prof saying that she looked forward to seen him in a week’s time.

Zen returned after seeing Robin off and said, “Prof you said that Robin was the bravest girl you know. Well I must say that I agree fully with you. In a case like hers I hate breast cancer with a vengeance. It is a vile horrible disease. I so wish that someone finds a cure for the disease.”

“That is not only your wish,” Prof stated. “Well let’s get on who is next?”

“Ms. Keera Scott, unmarried, 27 years old, chartered accountant by profession, referred by Doctor Joshua Putter,” Zen said before she walked out of the office to call the client.

When Zen walked into the office she was followed by a tall smartly dressed young woman. Prof took in the fact that the woman was dressed in a dark skirt suit with an orange blouse with a light green bow in the neck. Hanging

over her left shoulder was a leather handbag that looked at home. Her hair was auburn in colour and he got the impression that it was her natural colour. He noted that her breasts were of medium size and sat high on her chest. He took in the fact that she appeared to be very self assured and he thought that when she decided something she stuck to her decisions.

As she approached him Prof stood up and greeted her. He then invited her to have a seat. After she sat down and put her handbag on the floor next to the chair she looked expectantly at Prof.

“Good day, Ms. Scott,” Pro said greeting then added, “Please note that my sister, Zen, will remain with me throughout the time that we spend together. I never see a client without another woman being present. Breasts are a beautiful personal parts of a woman’s body and therefore it is important to me that my clients feel completely at ease when I examine them. Zen is a registered professional nurse who like me has specialized in breast diseases. I trust that you will be happy with that situation.”

With a smile Ms. Scott replied, “I have no problem with that arrangement. In actual fact I think that with some woman it would save you a number of explanations.”

Prof acknowledged Ms. Scott comment with a nod of his head and then said, “Talk to me Ms. Scott. Why did you ask to see me?”

“Professor I am 27 years old,” Ms. Scott said and continued, “I am the youngest of three sisters. My mother died of breast cancer 7 years ago. Then 3 years later my oldest sister Lea was diagnosed with breast cancer and she died last year. Then 4 months ago my remaining sister Janice was diagnosed with breast cancer. She had undergone a mastectomy and is on chemotherapy and radiation. Since the disease has hit the women of our

family I have been doing some reading and studies into the disease. During my readings I came across a number of articles about the familiarly nature of breast cancer. There it was stated that if the mother has breast cancer then there is a plus 80% chance that the daughters will also suffer from the disease. In our family that has proved to be true. 2 out of 3 daughters have already been diagnosed with breast cancer. I want to emphatically state that having seen how breast cancer has ravaged the woman in my family I do not want to get breast cancer. To this end I am requesting that you please perform a double mastectomy on me. Please note that I do know what I am requesting and my request is as a result of long and serious thought.”

On completion of her comments Ms. Scott looked at Prof as if expecting his reaction.

“Thank you Ms. Scott for you clear and concise explanation. I would like to complement you on your in-depth research and presentation. Before I do or say anything I would like to do a few things. Firstly I would like to do a physical examination of your breasts. Then I would like to drew blood for a blood test and then sent you for X-rays and a breast scan. With your permission I would like to see you tomorrow so that we can discuss the way forward. I trust that the way I have suggested we precede will meet with your approval.”

“Thank you Professor,” Ms. Scott stated.

“Please come with me, Ms. Scott,” Zen requested. With Ms. Scott following her Zen led her to change behind the screen and to go and test her urine sample.

When Ms. Scott returned dressed in a gown and pink bikini panties Prof examined her breasts. He found that the breasts were full and round and that sat in the middle of her chest. They were beautiful shaped with the areola pink in colour and with the nipples standing at attention

pointing slightly upwards. After an extensive and thorough breast examination Prof drew the necessary blood after which he sent her to Doctor Dylan Maxton the radiologist for the breast X-rays and scans.

When Prof walked into the office the following morning Phyllis reported that she had converted the lecture room into an interview room. She added that the candidates could wait their turn in the waiting room.

Prof walked into the lecture hall that was part of his offices and saw that Phyllis had arranged some tables to form an area from which the interview could take place. He noted that there were 3 chairs behind the tables and a single chair facing the tables. On the tables in front of the chairs he saw some notes. He walked closer and picked up a bundle of notes. He noted that the notes consisted of a question sheet that he and Zen had drawn up the previous day. It consisted of a comment and 3 questions. He read through the sheet and saw that he was to welcome the candidate then tell her about the position and the work that she was expected to do. He would then ask Zen to ask the candidate a question. He read through her question which was 'How do you see woman's breasts.' He then looked at Phyllis's question, 'Why do you think that woman are shy of their breasts.' Then with a smile he looked at his question which read, 'If I asked you to show us your breasts what would you do?'

Having read through the questions he thought back to the session that he had had with Zen, Phyllis and Cherie late the previous afternoon when they had discussed the interviews. There it had been decided that Cherie would man the office and check the girls out as they sat in the waiting room. She would also hand to each girl a letter that Prof drew up containing details about the task and function of the research assistant setting out all data with

regards to task and function, salary, working hours, leave and sick leave, as well as a brief summary of the breast cancer unit. Then he, Zen and Phyllis would undertake the interviews. It was also decided that after having carried out all the interviews they would all meet and discuss the interviews and decide what to do about each candidates.

Prof returned to his office and caught up with his paper work while waiting for the interviews to start.

On time Zen came and called him telling him that all the girls were waiting in the waiting room and led him to the interview room. After checking that everyone knew what was what Prof asked Zen to call Sarah Howe.

When Sarah walked into the room Prof observed that she was short and chubby. She was dressed in a flowing dress that sat nicely on her body. Her face was neatly made up and she walked with confidence. Looking at her breasts he took in the fact that she had big breasts that seemed to cover the whole of her chest. He took note of the fact that she, not like most big breasted woman, did not try to hide the fact that she had large breasts.

After inviting her to sit Prof introduced himself and Zen and Phyllis and then explained about the research funding from Breast International. He mentioned the type of research that they were going to carry out saying that if she was appointed then she would be working with breasts all day. After making sure that Sarah understood what was what. He invited Zen to ask her question.

After greeting Sarah Zen said, "Sarah could you please tell me how you see woman's breasts?"

Sarah was silent for a moment as she seemed to consider the in as soft voice replied saying, "I think that breast are the most important part of a woman's make-up. They add to her beauty and give her, her shape. They are also very important due to the fact that they are life givers.

By that I mean that they are used to breastfeed and so give a baby the food it needs to live. At the same time the breastfeeding time is a time of bonding between mother and baby via her breasts.”

On completion of her comments Zen said, “Thank you Sarah for a lovely answer. Phyllis.”

“Sarah,” Phyllis asked, “Why do you think that women are shy of their breasts.”

Once again Sarah considered the question and then replied saying, “I think that it is a cultural inbred thing in this country. It is sort of expected that women will be shy of their breasts. Here a woman is looked down upon if she flouts her breasts and she gets a name that she is a loose woman. So I think that women are shy of their breasts because it is expected of them.”

When she had completed her comment she looked at Phyllis who nodded her head and said, “Thank you for a lovely answer.

“It my turn to ask a question,” Prof said then he asked, “Sarah if I asked you to show me your breasts how would you react?”

Sarah sat quiet for a moment and then said, “Professor I am not sure if that is a question to answer or a question to react on. If it is the former then let me say I have no problem in answering the question. As you can see I have mountain boobies and I am sort of proud of them. I am size short and kind of wide and my boobies, as I call them, fit my body size. If you meant that you wanted to see them now that is not a problem. I will show you with pleasure although up until this point no man has ever seen them but as they say there is the first time for everything. So please Professor indicate how you want me to proceed, to keep quiet having answered your question or to proceed and display my boobies?”

“Sarah, you have answered my question fully,” Prof answered. “Although I would be privileged to be the first man to see your boobies, as you call them, I will leave that for someone else. Now it is over to you, is there something that you would like to ask us?”

“Professor,” Sarah asked, “Is the salary offered correct?”

“As set out in the letter you received it is correct,” Prof replied.

“Thank you then I have no other questions except maybe....” Sarah hesitated and then in a rush asked, “Professor will my bulk count me out of this job as it has in many other interviews that I have been for.”

“Sarah let me emphatically state that your size will play absolutely no part in your appointment to this position. Your appointment or non appointment will not be because of your body but because your are considered to be able to carry out the task and functions that the work involves. That is our only consideration. Do you understand?”

“Yes thank you Professor. I just want to say that I have 2 sisters and a brother and a mom and a dad and I am the smallest in build. So as you see me you see my family.”

“Anything else?” Prof asked.

“Thank you. No.” Sarah replied.

“Sarah thank you for coming for the interview. We will be contacting you within 24 hours about the result of this interview,” Prof stated.

Sarah nodded and stood up and walked out of the office.

As she walked out Prof said, “No comment on her. We will talk about all of them after we have seen all four. Zen please call the next girl.”

Prof and Phyllis sat silently as Zen went to fetch Myola Monod.

When she walked in Prof took note that she was petite in build. She was dressed in a plain white T-shirt with a denim knee length skirt and black shoes. Her hair was braded into tiny plats that were flat against her head. She had small breasts and he registered that she was braless and noted that her tiny nipples were clearly seen through the T-shirt.

Prof greeted her and then invited her to sit and introduced Zen and Phyllis. He then spoke to Myola and told her about Breast International and its funding of the breast cancer research. He also explained what research they were going to carry out adding that if she was appointed as a research assistant that she would be working with breasts ever day. He then asked if she understood the task and function of the research assistant.

Myola speaking in an unaccented voice thanked Prof for his explanation and said she understood what he had said.

Without a pause Zen asked, “Myola please tell me how you see woman’s breasts?”

Myola seemed to pause for a while and then with a giggle said, “As you all can see I do not possess much woman’s breasts. When breasts were issued I was sort of last in line. So how do I see woman’s breasts? I think that they are very beautiful, something for others to admire and to enjoy. I cannot think of anything more beautiful than a pair of breasts worn with pride by a woman. Breasts mean woman and a woman means breasts.” Myola stopped talking and she looked at Zen awaiting her reaction.

“That is so nice and honest,” Zen said. Then turning to Phyllis she said, “Your question please.”

Myola please tell me why you think that women are shy

of their breasts?” Phyllis asked.

“Why are women shy of their breasts,” Myola said and then she paused and thought then said, “Women are shy of their breast because it is expected of them. Back home in the rural areas where I grew up we love our breasts and without a problem will walk around the village topless, when we do that no one, men or other women care. To us it is normal. Yet when we come to the city we will not do that because it is expected that we will keep our breasts covered. I know that back home I often walk around showing my tiny breasts but would never ever do so here in the city. So I think that women are shy of their breast because they are expected to be shy of them.”

“What a wonderful idea,” Phyllis said.

A period on silence prevailed as everyone reflected on Myola’s reply.

The Prof asked, “Myola, if I asked you to show me your breasts how would you react?”

“Professor I would love to show you my tiny titties,” Myola replied and after a pause said, “As I said I love to show them. Then you can tell me if you have ever seen such small titties on a 20 year old girl.”

“No it’s alright, Myola you do not have to show them I was just trying to get an idea of your relationship with your breasts by asking that question,” Prof said. He paused and then asked, “Myola do you have something that you would like to ask us?”

“No thank you, Professor,” Myola replied. “I read the letter that Cherie gave us and in it I found all the answers to any questions that I may have had.”

“In that case,” Prof said, “Thank you for coming for the interview. We will be contacting you within 24 hours about the result of this interview.”

With that Myola stood up and bobbed her head at

everyone and saying, "Thank you for seeing me," walked out of the room.

Zen followed her out of the room and returned followed by a coloured girl. Prof stared at her. She was dressed in a red sleeveless T-shirt that sat like a second skin on her. The T-shirt outlined her medium size breasts with the nipples at attention and displayed that she definitely was braless. She was also wearing a black pair of shorts that looked as if they had been painted on her they were so tight. Then she was also wearing a pair of bright red calf length high heel boots laced up with black laces. Her face was heavily made up with her lips painted a vivid bright red and wearing very black eye make-up. Prof also noted that on the left biceps she had a tattoo that showed a cobra ready to strike. As he took in the picture the girl created he thought, 'Wow'!

Zen brought the girl towards the group and indicated that she must sit down. Zen said, "This is Carline Sinclair."

Professor introduced himself as well as Zen and Phyllis. He then enlightened Carline all about the funding received from Breast International. Following that up he spoke about that type of research that the research assistants will be involved in. He also emphasised that the researcher assistants would be working with breasts all the time. Having made sure that Carline understood and had no questions he asked Zen to ask her question.

"Could you please tell me how you see woman's breasts?" Zen asked.

"How I see woman's breasts," Carline said. "Well to me tits are tits. They are part and parcel of every woman, being big or tiny. Each woman has to make a decision about her tits and decide if she wants to hide them or flout them. I love to see a woman proud of what the Lord gave her. I must say that when a woman chooses to flout her tits

she is to do it in such a way that she does not prostitute herself. She must show who she is with pride.”

Silence followed Carline’s comments and then Zen said, “That is quite a thought Carline. Thank you. Over to you Phyllis.”

“Carline please tell the panel why you think that women are shy of their breasts.” Phyllis asked.

“I reckon that that is one of the woman’s best kept lie,” Carline replied with a smile. “I am sure that you know that Professor. All you have to do is get a woman to talk about her tits and would bet a hell a lot that you will have all the trouble in the world to get her to stop. Women see tits as either too big or too small and a hundred and one other things wrong with them.” Carline gave a soft laugh and said, “Wait I better shut up or I will sound like the women talking about their tits.”

“Carline that brings me to my question,” Prof said. “If I asked you to show me your breasts how would you react.”

Carline looked at Prof for a moment and then with the barest of movements gripped the bottom edge of her T-shirt and before anyone could react pulled the T-shirt over her head to sit, facing Prof, topless and said, “Like this.”

Surprised at Carline’s action Prof took in the fact that she had a pair of medium breasts that sat high on her chest. They were perfectly round in shape and he thought of them as pubic teen breasts. The nipples were pink in colour and stood at attention pointing upwards. The areola around the nipple was a light pink in colour and well defined.

Reacting Prof said, “Thank you Carline for demonstrating your relationship with your breasts in such a manner. I just wish to say that my question was if I asked you to show me your breasts how would you react. It was not meant to force you to do so.”

“Professor please do not think that I would have shown you my tits if I did not want to do so,” Carline said. “As you can see I have a good relationship with my tits but they are mine and very few people have ever seen them. I have chosen to live my life according to my rules and this has led me to decide what I do when I do it. When you asked me how I would react I decided to show you.”

She then stood up and quickly pulled her T-shirt on and pulled into position and sat down.

“Carline do you have any questions?” Prof asked.

“Thank you no. Your letter that was given to us when we arrived was very clear and sorted everything out,” Carline said. She paused and then said, “I just would like to say that if I am appointed as a research assistant I will be over the moon. Since I got my degree I have not found anything that I would like to do except this. I know that it sounds as if I am asking you for the job. Well to be true I am. Thank you for seeing me and for considering me.”

“Carline we will be contacting you within 24 hours about the result of this interview,” Prof said, “Thank you for coming for the interview.”

Carline replied saying, “Thank you for seeing me I hope to see you all again.” She then walked out of the office without looking back.

Zen sat still for a moment and then said, “Wait let me go and get Rayleigh Naidoo. She is the last one that we have to see.”

A while later Zen returned followed by a tall willowy girl dressed in a Sari. She had sleek pitch black waist length hair that she wore long without any adornments. She looked very attractive and comfortable in her Sari and Prof had the opinion that she was completely at home wearing her Sari. The Sari enclosed her body, cupping her braless breasts which Prof observed were elongated and

half round and leaving her whole abdominal area open.

Prof took in the fact that she had a beautiful golden brown skin colour.

With a broad smile she greeted everyone saying, “Hello everyone I am Rayleigh Naidoo. Thank you for allowing me to apply for the post as a research assistant.”

Prof returned her greeting and asked her to be seated then introduced Zen and Phyllis. He followed that up by explaining that the unit had received a grant from Breast International and that research was going to be carried out on bras and breast cancer as well as on breast sagging. He made sure that Rayleigh understood that if she was appointed to the post that she would be working with breasts all day.

When Rayleigh indicated that she understood his explanation Prof asked Zen to ask her question.

In reply to Zen question on how she saw women’s breasts Rayleigh replied saying, “To be perfectly honest I hardly ever used to see or notice breasts. But that changed when my mother’s sister was diagnosed with breast cancer and had her left breast removed. That made me think about breasts. As for myself I wear a Sari as often as I can and I enjoy wearing it. The thing with the Sari is that it draws attention to my tummy area and not to my breasts so my tummy is much more important than my breasts. Oh! I know that one day my breasts will be important and that is when I have a child and have to breast feed.” With a smile she added, “To summarise I know breasts are there but they are not important to me personally although I know other woman love them and flout them but that is their privilege.”

Prof thanked her for her comments and then asked Phyllis to ask her question.

“Rayleigh, why do you think that women are shy of

their breasts?" Phyllis asked.

"I do not think the Indian woman are shy of their breasts. I just think that they do not see them as important at all. To the Indian woman breasts are there but not of importance. The abdomen and the hair and face is of more importance. So I honestly do not think that women especially Indian women are shy of their breasts."

"Thank you, Rayleigh," Phyllis said adding. "Prof!"

"Rayleigh, this brings me to ask my question," Prof said. "Tell me if I asked you to show me your breasts how would you react."

"I do not see that as a problem," Rayleigh said. "If you want to see them then I will drop the top of my Sari and then show you what they look like." With that she stood up.

"It's alright, Rayleigh! I take note of the fact that you will show me. I was just finding out what your relationship with your breasts is. Now I must ask you if you have any questions that you would like to ask us?" Prof asked.

"Thank you but no thank you I have nothing to ask," Rayleigh said.

"In that case all that remains for me to say is thank you for coming for the interview." Prof stated. "We will be contacting you within 24 hours about the result of this interview," Prof said.

"Thank you," Rayleigh said as she walked out of the office.

"It's teatime now," Prof said. "Then we will meet to talk about the interviews."

Chapter 6

It was nearly an hour later when Prof called everyone together. Cherie also joined them.

Addressing everyone Prof said, “We will talk about each girl as they came to be interviewed. I ask that each of you says what you think. I will start by stating the educational qualifications and then the floor will be open.”

Prof looked at everyone and noted that all were happy with his suggestion. Then he said, “Sarah Howe 21 years old, educational qualifications Diploma in Human Recourses. Employment history, no permanent employment, has worked as a waitress for the last 3 years at the same restaurant, comments please.”

“I was impressed with her. She spoke well and is proud of her mountain boobies,” Phyllis said.

“In the waiting room she passed a comment that I took that she loved her breasts and was not as all shy of the fact that her breasts or boobies as she called them,” Cherie said.”

“I did not notice anything that disqualifies her from us appointing her,” Zen stated.

“I was also of the opinion that she would fit in well here. The advantage is that she is not a normal breast girl which will appeal to our clients as they will not see just tiny breast people.” Prof paused and then said, “In front of you, you will find a piece of paper. Please full in yes if you think we should appoint Sarah or no if you think that we should not appoint her. Please do so now and send the paper to me.”

All the girls and Prof wrote on the paper and Prof collected the papers. As he opened them he read, “Yes, yes, yes, yes. Well that is unanimous. We have one research assistant.”

Prof then picked up the next file and said, “Myola Monod, 23 years old, educational qualifications registered enrolled nursing assistant and a certificate as a medical assistant. Employment history has worked at the local hospital in the surgical ward as a voluntary ward clerk for the past 2 years. This is a non pay position.”

“Do I understand that she has been working at a hospital for two years as a ward clerk and has not been paid?” Cherie asked.

“They say there is not enough money to pay ward clerks so the hospital asks for voluntaries to do the work,” Zen explained. “I think highly of her.”

“I found nothing against her,” Phyllis said.

“Use your papers,” Prof said.

After collecting the papers he said, “That is our second research assistant, a full house of yes’s.”

He moved Myola file aside and picked up the next file and read, “Carline Sinclair 22 years old, educational qualifications Honours degree in Information Technology, Employment history, Has undertaken private consultant work as an I T specialist.

“My eyes nearly popped out when she walked into the waiting room,” Cherie said. “But she was so comfortable in her clothes and spoke so well to the other girls. Sarah was especially tense but Carline soon got her to relax by talking encouragingly to her. Her presence made all the girls at ease. I got the idea that she is a born leader.”

“I was shocked when she showed us her breasts,” Phyllis said, “But as I thought about that I realized that she was telling us that we could give her anything to do and she would do it without a problem. Dress code aside I think that she is fantastic. I love the way that she has an attitude that says I am me and I live as I want to and if you don’t

like it bloody hard lines,”

“She reminds me of the senior mama in the kraal,” Zen said. “She has a commanding presence and no matter what a person thinks of her she does her own thing. I have an idea that she will not accept any trouble from anyone.”

“Papers please,” Prof asked and after collecting then said, “That is another full house, 4 yeses.”

Picking up another file Pro said, “Rayleigh. 20 years old, educational qualifications she has only her major Communications 3 to complete to get her degree. She is studying via correspondence. Employment history is null as she has been studying since she left school.”

Prof paused and then said, “I want to make a comment here. She is much a plenty pretty and wears her Sari with a wonderful grace. I must admit that I would like to see her in a T-shirt and jeans.”

Giggling Zen said, “I thought that you might like her. She is just as self assured and willowed. About her all I can say even though she does not worry about her tits she will do well here.”

“I agree. Of all the girls she is the one that I would say would be perfect to become a breast research assistant,” Phyllis said.

“She mentioned to me that she would love to have the job as she felt that she would be doing something worthwhile,” Cherie said.

“If there are no more comments,” Prof said, “Papers please.”

Once again Prof checked the papers and then said, “Another 4 out of 4. So we now have 4 research assistants. I will phone everyone tomorrow morning and inform them and I will give you a letter to write to each one this afternoon so it can go out tomorrow. The girls will start on the 1st of next month that is in 6 days time. The 1st is a

Tuesday and I propose to let them settle in on the 1st. Then from the 2nd to the 4th I want to take the girl away for a camp at Avontur. There I will teach the girls about breasts and all about research and a bit of other things that I feel they will need working here.”

“Excuse me Prof,” Phyllis said, “May I please make a request?”

“Talk to me,” Prof asked.

“Prof, could you maybe consider taking both me and Cherie on the camp. We work with all the things you do but only have a very little knowledge of breasts, or boobies, or titties or tits. I know that for myself I would love to know more. Please Prof consider my request.”

“Mine too. I also want to go to hear what you teach the new girls. Please,” Zen asked.

“I must admit that I never thought of taking the whole department. Off the top of my head I think that it is a fantastic idea,” Prof said, “Phyllis no clients for that period while we are away. I will work out the details and let you all know.”

“Before I forget thank you all for your input today, I think that we did a wonderful job. I feel that we have appointed some very able breast research assistants. I must phone Pastor David Dillon and thank him for his aid and assistance.”

Prof paused and then said, “Well I suppose that we better get back to work. Once again thank you everyone.”

The next morning Prof had phoned each new research assistant to inform them of their appointment. They were all over the moon with Carline uttering a loud, “Oh! Yes!” when he told her that she had been appointed. She and all the girls indicated that they would report for work on the 1st.

Later that morning Prof signed letters to be sent to

each girl confirming the telephone call and confirming their appointment. In the letter Prof had informed the appointees that they would be attending a training camp over the period 2nd to the 4th at Avontur.

Prof also took time to phone Pastor David Dillon to thank him for his aid in the appointment of the research assistants and asked him to pass on his thanks to the other pastors from whose church's the girls had come. As he did that Pastor Dillon said that he must hold on as Pastor Steve George of King's Community Church where Carline Sinclair attended would like to say something.

Prof heard Pastor Dillon hand the phone over to Pastor George who greeted him and then said, "Yesterday after she had been to the interview Carline came to see me. She told me about the interview and mentioned how she had stripped off. She was so excited and so frighten. She then asked me to pray for her to ask God that if it was His wish that she get the job. I did as she requested and as I prayed I had the feeling in my soul that she would be appointed and found myself telling her that. She will be over the moon to know that she is to be appointed. I want to tell you again that she is a rough diamond and that she will give her all plus to you."

As Prof thanked Pastor George for his comments and he said that Pastor Dillon wanted to talk to him again.

Once again he heard the phone change hands and the Pastor Dillon said, "Professor thank you for letting me know about the appointments. It is good news. Could I invite you to join us one Sunday morning at one of our celebrations that occur at 0900. You and your family will be most welcome. Then lastly I am glad that we were able to supply you with the girls that you needed."

As he made the last comment Prof heard that Pastors Dillon's voice was full with laughter and remembered

Pastor George's comment about them supplying him with girls that he needed. The call ended on a upbeat note.

Later that morning Melody came to see him. On examination Prof found no obvious change and was pleased with her condition. While Melody was with him the phone rang and Prof immediately knew that it was something urgent as he had told Phyllis never ever to put a call through to him when he had a client unless it was super urgent. Because Phyllis had carried out that instruction to the T he knew that the call was urgent. Apologising to Melody he took the call.

"Prof this is urgent," Phyllis said, "Robin Castle needs you urgently. Please talk to her." With that she transferred the call to the outside line and Prof heard her say, "Robin, Professor is on the phone. Go ahead and talk to him."

On hearing Phyllis's comments Prof said, "Robin. I am listening. Talk to me."

"Professor I am in my principal's office and I have just had my right breast torn off. What must I do?"

"Robin you are not making sense. Tell me what happened," Prof requested.

"Professor I have a boy, Blake Fryer in my class." Robin said and in a voice that told Prof that she was crying continued saying, "He is big and strong. He plays front row rugby and is very big and strong. He loves to grab the girls on their breasts and squeeze and pull on them. Well today he did that to me. He grabbed me on the prosthesis and squeezed and pulled. I jerked away from him and as a result he tore the breast out of the bra and caused my prosthesis bra to tear so that my right breast is hanging. My shirt is also torn. He also injured my chest wall and I have a number of bleeding points. One quite badly what do you suggest I do."

"Robin come and see me immediately," Prof said.

“When you get here Phyllis will slot you in to see me.”

“Professor I cannot get to you.” Robin said, “Mom is at an all day conference and her cell is switched off.”

“Let me talk to your principal please,” Prof said, “I will see you soon.”

Prof heard Robin say, “Sir my Professor wants to talk to you.”

Just after that a male voice said, “Jenkins. Principal Ellsworth High. Good day.”

“Good day this is Professor Ces Rauts. I am the doctor who undertook Robin’s operations.”

“Professor,” Jenkins said interrupting said, “I was not aware of the nature of Robin’s operation until a short while ago. All we at the school knew was that she was sick and that she had been for an operation.”

“Jenkins,” Prof said in a voice filled with anger. “As far as I know it has nothing to do with you what operation Robin had. But it had a lot to do with you that you keep her safe. Could you tell me if her description of what happened is correct?”

“Professor I will only be able to answer that after we have fully investigated the incident.” Jenkins replied.

“In that case please tell me if Robin’s description of her breast is correct,” Prof asked.

“Well Robin’s school shirt is torn and her right breast is hanging at an angle and her shirt is all bloody,” Jenkins replied adding, “We have never had an incident like this at this school.”

Suddenly Prof heard Robin voice as she spoke in the background saying, “Sir, Mary Shell reported to you last week that Blake Fryer had groped her and you said that it was nothing.”

Prof heard Jenkins say, “Keep quiet, Robin. This conversation has nothing to do with that.”

“Sorry about that but Robin is worked up,” Jenkins said.

“I would think that she is worked up,” Prof stated. “She has undergone a major operation and then has been violated by someone who sounds as if he has done it before.”

“Professor I find it hard to believe that Blake Fryer would do the things he is accused of. He comes from a high class family and his father is the chairman of the school PTA and regular contributor large amount to our school funds,” Jenkins said.

Prof felt the pressure building up in him and he forcefully had to put a cap on his anger. In a voice that reflected his anger he said, “Jenkins just because Blake’s father is a milk cow for your school and for that reason you must protect him does not mean that he is not a groper. Now unless you deliver Robin to my rooms within the next 30 minutes I intend to approach the local newspaper with the story that girls are groped at your school and that you do nothing about it. I also intend to report the matter to the police. I will get them to talk to Robin and Mary and I am sure we will find other girls that have been groped. This Blake seems to be a serial groper. Do I make myself clear?”

“Professor,” Jenkins said in a voice full of desperation, “There is no need to go to the newspapers or the police. I promise you that this incident will be fully investigated. I will report back to you on our findings within 3 days. I will then suggest how we solve the situation. With regards to Robin I will personally deliver her to your office within 30 minutes.”

“Jenkins when you get here you will please wait until I have seen Robin and decided what treatment she needs. I will then inform you and you can take her to where she needs to go. I will also expect a full report on the incident

within 3 days as well as the suggestion how we solve this problem. I will see you later.”

Without giving Jenkins a chance to respond he put the phone down.

“Wow,” Melody said, “Prof, I have seen another side of you now. I never knew that you could wield a big stick. I loved the way you sounded. You told that Jenkins that you do not take shit from anyone.” Giggling Melody turned to Zen and said, “He must blow at you every day and give you hell if you breathe twice instead of once.”

“You must hear him when a client is not here. He screams and shouts at us all the time,” Zen said as she winked at Melody.

Too much giggling and laughter Prof reacted by saying, “Get lost both of you before I do yell and shout at you two.”

He then completed Melody’s examination and finding no significant change arranger to see her within a week.

Zen went to fetch the next client and Robin came running into the office. Prof took in the fact that the right breast was at an angle and that her school shirt was torn and bloody. Robin ran up to Prof and hugged him and with a giggle said, “Professor I intend to hug you each time I see you as you are my older lover.”

“You are most welcome,” Prof said as he returned her hug and then stepped out of the hug saying, “Let’s have a look.”

Without saying a word Robin stepped away from Prof and took off her school shirt and allowed Prof to see the torn bra. He noted that because her bra was torn that her right prosthesis breast hung at an angle. When he nodded Robin took her bra off and Prof saw that the right chest wall was badly bruised and that there were a number of bleeding points that seeped blood across her chest wall. He also saw that the one blood vessel was badly torn and that

blood flowed freely from the blood vessel. Without him asking Zen gave him a sterile pad which he used to applied pressure to that point.

As he did so he said, “Robin I am afraid that I will have to take you back to hospital to fix the chest wall. That bastard must have gripped you something awful.”

“Professor Mary Shell has still got large bruises on her breasts from being groped by Blake,” Robin said. “I so wish that I can spit in Snotty eye, Snotty is our principal, Jenkins. I will do anything to kick him in the privates.”

“Robin you have given me an idea,” Prof said. “Let’s fix the bastard once and for all. With your permission I am going to invite him to come into the office and to see your torn prosthesis bra and then to see the wounds on your chest wall. Now please understand that if you do not want him to see it, it is no problem.”

“I think that that is brilliant,” Robin said, “It’s no wonder that I love you. You have got brains.”

Laughing Prof said, “Robin please put your bra and shirt on then Zen can go and call Jenkins. When he comes in all I am going to tell him is that due to a breast condition we had to remove both breasts and then without a word you can take off your school shirt and give him a chance to see the prosthesis bra and then take it off so he can see your chest walls. If he does not grab Blake by the balls after that then he will fall out of a double decker bus onto the tar road and the back wheels of the bus will ride over him.”

“Yes! Oh! Yes!” Robin said, “Jenkins or Snotty as we call him is a real piece of you know what. Bring him on; let’s drop him off of the double decker bus.” While she was speaking Robin pulled her prosthesis bra on and shirt.

Prof nodded to Zen and she walked out of the office. Robin stood looking at the door and a short while later Zen

returned leading a man in a smart suit into the office. He came to a stop and looked at Prof.

“Jenkins,” Prof said, “A while ago Robin had a double mastectomy, that is the removal of both breasts, due to a breast condition. So as not to be made a fool of or teased by the children she has been wearing a prosthesis bra. She has requested that you see the results of her operation so you can understand what Blake did to her and has done to other girls at the school.”

“Professor I do not have any evidence that Blake has touched Robin as I have stated I do not believe that Blake would do such a thing.” Jenkins stated.

Before he could go further he watched as Robin removed her school shirt and showed him her prosthesis bra with the torn right breast. Then she took the bra off and showed him her bruised and bleeding chest wall.

As Robin did so Prof said, “You can see that there are quite a lot of bleeding points and one major bleeding area. I will be taking Robin to hospital to repair the damage. I must also tell you that I will be seeing Mary Shell and will be taking photos of the bruises on her breasts. This will be used to take fingerprints from the bruises and then I will apply for a court order to match Blake’s fingerprints with the fingerprints taken from Mary’s breasts. That should prove once and for all if Blake is a serial groper or not.”

“Professor,” Jenkins said as he stared memorized at Robin. “I never knew it was so bad. I promise you that I will give you a full report within 3 days as well as to how we will proceed.”

“Sir,” Robin said. “I walked into history class and then in front of everyone Blake grabbed me on the shoulders and said something like, your tits are asking to be felt up today. He then reached out and grabbed at my tits. I tried to move away and he got angry and yelled at me saying

‘stand still slut.’ With that he grabbed at my right breast and his hand caught on my shirt. The result was that he grabbed my right breast and jerked at it. That caused my shirt and bra to tear and my prostheses to get moved. Because of the way Blake was manhandling me the prosthesis rubbed against my operation scars and I began to bleed. When Blake saw what he had done he yelled at me telling me that I would suffer something worse if I told anyone what he had done. He then turned to the class and threatened to deal with anyone who spoke about what had happened. He then turned to me and said I was to sit down slut and shut up. Saying, ‘Remember you fell against the door and so hurt your tit.’ I did not listen to him and started to run out of the class. At that Mr. Field our history teacher came into the class. As I ran out of the class I heard Mr. Field ask what was going on and Mary loudly said that Blake had ripped my breast off. Even though Blake tried to shut her up by saying that I had fallen against a door the last thing I heard was Mary asking if that was the case how come there was a pool of blood on the floor in the middle of the room. I did not hear anything else and I went to our principal who although he was shocked to see me with my breast hanging and bleeding said that I was putting on.”

“Professor,” Jenkins said. “I was shocked to see the state that Robin was in. I was not myself and do not recall how I reacted. I am sure that I was not so unsympathetic.”

“Three days Jenkins,” Prof said ignoring Jenkins comment and continued saying, “In the meantime I will see Mary Shell and get the fingerprint images.” Prof paused and then added, “If for any reason Mary should refuse to have the fingerprint impressions made then I will apply for a court order to force her to comply. At the same time I will then ask for a judicial inquiry into the action of the school

with reference to the groping. I am sure that a number of girls will confirm the action of Blake. But well it is over to you Jenkins I will see you within three days with a full report and suggestions on the way forward.”

“Now Jenkins you will take Robin to where her mother is in conference and get hold of her and tell her what happened and then take Robin to the hospital and get her admitted. I will go to the hospital after my clinic here and work on Robin. She will be out of school for the next 10 days or so.”

Turning to Robin he said, “Robin go behind the screens and get a gown to wear. Do not wear anything over the wounds. Zen will dress the bleeding points. Then go with your principal to inform your mother what happened and then go to hospital and I will see you there later.”

Robin nodded and walked behind the screen followed by Zen. Prof addressing Jenkins said, “You can wait for Robin in the waiting room. Thank you.”

With that he walked and sat down behind his desk and picked up Ms. Keera Scott file.

Finding himself ignored Jenkins wondered out of the office to the waiting room.

Chapter 7

A short while after Jenkins and Robin left Zen walked into the office followed by Ms. Keera Scott. She immediately took her seat and greeted Prof then said, “Well Professor what do the tests say?”

“Afternoon Ms. Scott,” Prof said, “I have had a time to peruse the tests, scans, blood tests and X-rays. My study has revealed that there is not a single indication at this moment of any breast cancer.”

“Professor that is good to hear,” Ms Scott stated then asked, “Can you say that that will always be the case. Is there a chance that given my family history, that I will not get breast cancer?”

“Unfortunately I am not in a position to say that,” Prof stated, “No one is.”

“Well then taking my family history into consideration I would request that you please carry out a double mastectomy.”

“Ms Scott I am not going to argue with you with regards your decision,” Prof said. “I just want to ask you one question. Do you have any doubts about your decision to have a double mastectomy where you allow your healthy breasts to be amputated?”

Without a moment’s hesitation Ms. Scott said, “Not a single question. I have made my decision and I stick with it.”

“In the light of that Ms. Scott I would ask you to talk to Phyllis my receptionist who will arrange a date for your admission to hospital for the operation,” Prof said adding, “I will see you in hospital on the morning before the operation and depending on how you take the operation you could spend up to 5 days in hospital, any questions?”

“None, thank you Professor,” Ms. Scott said as she stood up. With a nod of her head she left the office

followed by Zen.

After five Prof accompanied by Zen, who had insisted that she wanted to be with Prof, when he went to visit Robin Castle in hospital, arrived in her ward. As he entered the ward he was met by Robin's mother who was very upset. She spoke to Prof about the attack on Robin during which she indicated that she was super angry and could quite easily do the boy, who had injured Robin, a fatal injury. With sadness she added that at times like this she missed her husband who had been killed a year previously in a motor accident. Prof cooled her down saying that he had spoken to Jenkins and that he had to report back to him within three days with a solution or else he would go to the newspapers and police. He promised to keep Ms. Castle informed.

On examination Prof found that Robin still had a number of bleeding points. On testing Robin's haemoglobin Prof discovered that Robin suffered from blood loss and he prescribed a blood intravenous infusion. He also took her to theatre where he cauterized the bleeding points.

After making sure that Robin was comfortable Prof took Zen and dropped her off at her flat before driving home.

Prof started the next morning at the hospital where he visited Robin. After checking her out he said that she could be discharged but that she was not to wear her prosthesis bra for the following two weeks to allow the chest wounds to recover completely. When Robin heard that she immediately stated that she would not go to school until she could wear her prosthesis bra.

When Prof arrived at the office he was surprised to find that Zen hurried him into the office and said that she had some people who needed to see him immediately. She

then left him and soon returned with Ms. Castle, Robin's mother, and a woman and a girl. Zen introduced the woman and girl as Ms. Mary Shell and her daughter Mary Shell.

Prof could not for a moment place the name Mary Shell although he knew that he had heard the name. Then just before Ms. Castle began to speak he remembered that she was the girl that had also been groped at school by Blake and whose breasts were badly bruised.

"Professor," Ms. Castle said, "A week before Robin was groped by Blake he groped Mary and when she resisted squeezed her breasts and badly bruised them. When Mary complained to the headmaster, Mr. Jenkins, he told her that she was over reacting. Professor neither Ms. Shell nor I have a man who can help us against Mr. Jenkins. So we decided to hear if you would be our man in this case please?"

"Thank you Ms. Castle I would love to be your man in this case," Prof said. He then turned to Ms. Shell and asked. "Would you mind if I examined Mary's breasts so that I know from what premise I have to work."

Without waiting for her mother to say anything Mary took off her school blazer and shirt and said, "I am sorry Professor that I am not wearing a bra but it is too painful to wear one."

Looking at her medium size pubic breasts that were firm and round with pink small nipples and tiny dark red areola and saw yellow bruises on her breasts Prof said, "Mary not wearing a bra is the very best thing you can do. A bra would agitate the bruises and cause you more pain, congrats on using your brains."

He then stepped closer to Mary and examined each breast in detail. As he did so he was conscious that Zen had placed a tray on the desk. Glancing at the tray he saw it

was his photo tray. He also noted that she had put a tin of baby powder down next to the tray. On completion of the examination he turned to Ms. Shell and asked, "Ms. Shell would you have an objection if I took some photos of Mary's breasts that is to say if Mary has no objections."

"I do not mind," Mary said before her mother could reply.

"Mary has OK it so go ahead," Ms. Shell said.

"Mary I wish not only to take photos of your breasts but of all of you. You must understand that if we rock the boat then the first thing that will be said is that you got the bruises elsewhere. They will insinuate that you got the bruises during sex. So if you do not mind I would like to take all types of photos to cover all angles. I am also going to let Zen dust your breast with baby powder. That will allow any marks on your breasts to be clearly seen. That way we may be able to lift a fingerprint or two from your breasts. Do you have a problem?"

"Not a single one Professor," Mary said and then giggling said, "I, like many girls have wondered what it will be like to have nude photos taken. So now I will find out."

Reacting to Zen's comment that she must follow her she led Mary behind the screen.

A while later Mary reappeared wearing a white gown. She walked and stood in front of Prof. He led her to a patch of wall that was painted a mat white and positioned her. Without hesitation Mary stepped out of her gown and posed nude as Prof took close-up photos of her breasts and then of her body from all angles. He ended the photo session by taking some close-up of the bruises after Zen had dusted then with baby powder. It had become obvious that the bruise marks showed marking which caused Zen to say, "Well we have got a nice set of fingerprints. He must just try and deny anything and he will be proven to be a

liar.”

“Thank you Mary,” Prof said, “You can get dressed now. We have more than required evidence to prove conclusively that you were groped.

Prof paused and then said, “With Robin it is straight forward as a number of learners saw it happen. Now Mary I am going to sent you to X-rays for a breast scan so there will be no ways that the case can be denied. Mary when you are having the scan Doctor Dylan Maxton the radiologist will come and look at the bruises. Tell him what happened. Mary go with Zen who will lead you to Doctor Maxton.”

Prof turned to the two mothers and said, “Ladies I would suggest that you go and wait for Mary in the waiting room. One thing ladies neither of you will receive an account for any treatment your daughters receive. The account will be sent to the school.”

“Thank you Professor,” Ms. Shell said adding, “Thank you for being our man in this case.”

As the mother’s left the office Prof phoned Doctor Maxton and brought him up to date on Mary’s groping and asked him to examine her breasts.

The rest of the day passed without any drama with Zen saying that it had become a boring day.

As Prof drove to work the following morning he got a sms that read, ‘Please kick butt today and crush his balls love u Robin’.

On arriving at work he was met by Zen who after greeting him handed him her cell without saying a word. He looked at the cell and saw that there was a message on it that read, ‘Please help our man squeeze balls today so hard that he cries like a baby. He must know that squeezing tits is just as sore as getting his balls squeezed. Thank u 4 looking after our man Robin’

Having read the sms he showed Zen his message. After

reading it she said, "I think the two messages show how hurt she got. Not only hurt on the breast area but hurt in her total being. I think that if Blake is brought to book then it will go a long way to healing her. She is very upset that her class knows about her breast cancer and the fact that she has lost her breasts."

"I would love to talk to her class and explain about her condition and that way encourage them to do self breast examination," Prof said.

"I will see what I can do. I am sure that 2 mothers and I can move a mountain or two. Just watch if we don't," Zen said with a giggle. Then changing the subject said, "We must leave soon to go and do the breast clinic."

On returning to the office after the breast clinic Prof was told by Phyllis that she had made an appointment for Mr. Jenkins to see him and that he was waiting in the waiting room together with another man.

When Prof and Zen walked into his office Zen said, "Prof I have a feeling that Jenkins is going to try and weasel his way out of this."

"All I know that if he tries to do that he is going to fall out of the bus and fall very hard," Prof commented with feeling.

Zen then handed him two files and two envelopes saying, "Robin and Mary's files and their photos."

"Thanks Zen. Let's have him. Please do not leave me alone with him," Prof requested.

"Don't worry," Zen said. "I want to hear what he has to say." She then walked out of the room.

A few moments later she returned leading Jenkins and another man into the room saying, "Mr. Jenkins and Mr. Fryer as she indicated that they must have a seat.

Looking at Jenkins, Prof saw that he was very tense and he decided to pounce immediately. Without giving

Jenkins a time to be seated he said, "Jenkins tell us what your investigations have reviled and how we go forward. Or do I go to the police and newspapers. Please may I request that you do not waste my time?"

"Professor," Jenkins said smoothly adding, "I investigated the so call incidents and came to the conclusion that it was a case of boy having a bit of fun and not meaning to do any harm. I personally feel that the girls over reacted to the incident."

"Jenkins are you saying that your investigation has revealed that any boy in your school can touch or grope any girl's breasts and that that is not a problem. You have also found out that when a boy touches or gropes a girls breasts that the girl must accept it and not react even though she is injured. Is that correct?" Prof asked in a voice that displayed his anger.

"No Professor you have got it all wrong I never said that the boys at school can touch the girls breasts and that the girls must accept it," Jenkins protested.

"Correct me where I am wrong," Prof said, "you have just said that you had investigated the incidents where a boy at your school groped at least 2 girl's breasts and injured the breasts so badly that the girls had to receive medical treatment. The one girl so badly that she had to be hospitalized and the other that she is still carrying wounds 12 days after the incident. Then you say that you have come to the conclusion that it was a case of a boy having a bit of fun and not meaning to do any harm. In other words you say that what the boy did was not a problem and the reading of that is that any other boys can do the same thing as it is not a problem. Then you add that the incident is due to the girls over reacted to the incident. In other words they got injured because they objected to a boy groping their breasts. Jenkins before you react to my comments I

want you to look at the following photos.”

“You cannot twist Mr. Jenkins comments like that,” Mr. Fryer angrily said.

“Jenkins! Who is the man with you?” Prof asked adding, “He comes into my office together with you and sits down but you do not consider it important enough for me to know who he is and why he is with you.”

“Apologies Professor,” Jenkins said, “This is Mr. Fryer. He is the chairman of the school’s PTA and is the senior partner of the law firm Fryer, David and Malls.”

“So you have brought your lawyer with you,” Prof commented. “Jenkins why did you not complete that introduction and tell me that Mr. Fryer is some relation to Blake. Father I presume?”

“Yes I am Blake’s father but that has nothing to do with this incident,” Mr. Fryer stated.

“Sir there you are wrong. It has been reported to me by both girls that I treated for breast injuries that they were groped and injured by Blake Fryer and you say that that fact has nothing to do with this incident,” Prof said. “But before we discuss this incident any further could I please ask a question and then show you some photos. I would like to know if Blake plays rugby?”

“Of course he plays rugby,” Mr. Fryer stated with pride. “He plays front row forward and is big and strong and should play for the national team one day.”

“Now I request that you both look at these photos,” Prof asked as he handed Jenkins 6 photos saying, “2 photos are of Robin and 2 of Mary. Then there is a close up of the breasts of each girl.”

Jenkins glanced at the photos and then passed them on to Mr. Fryer who stared at them and appeared quite shocked at what he was seeing.

After looking at the photos Mr. Fryer said, “How do we

know that these photos have not been doctored?”

Prof picked up his phone and dialed a number. He waited a while then spoke saying, “Doctor Maxton this is Professor Ces Rauts. Please come to my office immediately and bring with you the X-rays and scans of Mary Shell. Thank you.” He then put the phone down and said, “Mr. Fryer Mary Shell was so badly bruised that she had to have X-rays and a scan. I would request that you look at the X-rays and scan and take note of bruises that are display and then make sure that the photos in your hand showing the bruises are correctly reflected.”

Silence descended in the room and was broken when Phyllis brought Doctor Maxton into the office. Prof immediately introduced the man to one another saying, “Doctor Dylan Maxton please meet Mr. Fryer the senior partner of Fryer, David and Malls the law firm. Mr. Fryer is also the chairman of the Ellsworth High PTA. Mr. Jenkins is the headmaster of Ellsworth High.

The men exchanged nods and then Prof said, “Dr. Maxton I referred a client to you the day before yesterday asking that certain X-rays be taken and that a breast scan be made. Could you please show the gentlemen the X-rays and scans and explain what you have found.”

Without mincing words Dr. Maxton showed the X-rays and scans explaining what was seen. He emphasised the damage that the wounds had caused to the breast tissue. He ended off by saying that if someone gripped the scrotum of the men then they would not be able to move and what had happened to his client had the same result.

Mr. Fryer asked if he could prove how the breasts were injured.

In answer Dr. Maxton replied saying, “I have an X-ray and a scan picture that show a clear image of a fingerprint on the breast. It will be easy to lift the print and compare it

with a person's fingerprints and I know that they will definitely show who is guilty of injuring the breasts. By the way Mr. Fryer let me say that there have been a number of cases where the courts in this country have accepted the fact that fingerprints have been lifted from human tissue and allowed in evidence. I am afraid that in this case there can be no doubt that the person who injured the breast is guilty."

Prof noted that Mr. Fryer seemed to sink into his chair. He then asked, "Well Jenkins where do we go from here?"

Jenkins looked at Mr. Fryer and then said, "Professor I ask that you allow me the opportunity to discuss the situation with Mr. Fryer and then we will get back to you. Let's say in a week or so."

"I am sorry Jenkins when we discussed allowing you three days to resolve the problem there was no discussion about extending it," Prof said.

Prof paused and then was interrupted by Dr. Maxton who said. "Mr. Fryer you as a lawyer know that a doctor has to report any case of child abuse to the police within 36 hours of becoming aware of the abuse. Just before I came here I filled in form Z321/20 which is used to report abuse of a minor to the police."

"No! You cannot do that," Mr. Fryer shouted.

"I am sorry sir I do not understand why I cannot do that. If I do not report the matter then I am guilty of committing a crime. Are you as a lawyer suggestion that I should commit a crime?" Dr. Maxton asked.

"No! No! That is not what I am suggesting," Mr. Fryer hurriedly said. "I am sure that we can come to some or other arrangement. Blake meant no harm."

Before he could go further the phone rang and uttering an apology Prof picked up the phone and said, "Yes."

“Prof Ms. Castle and Ms. Shell are here and they have brought sworn statement by 16 girls from Ellsworth High who all swear under oath that they have been groped by Blake within the past year and that they reported the matter to the principal who said that they were exaggerating and that it was nothing. Shall I bring it to you?”

“Lovely,” Prof said. “Please bring the sworn statements to me. Tell the people who brought the statements not to leave. Then contact Jason Bellingham and tell him to get his feet here asap if not sooner.”

Phyllis walked into the office and handed Prof a file. In silence he opened the file and glancing at it. The first thing that he noted was that the covering letter was from the law firm Herman and Grant. Skim reading he saw that they had stated that they had taken the following sworn statements from the following 16 girls. He noted that the list of girls contained Robin’s and Mary’s names. He turned the page and then quickly read a statement by a Kenny Cozad who stated that she was groped by Blake giving the date, time and place and saying who had seen it happen. She also stated that she had reported the matter to the principal who had told her that she was overreacting and that Blake meant nothing by his actions.

Without a word he handed the complete file to Mr. Fryer. Who took the file and opened it and began to read it.

Prof broke the silence by saying, “Mr. Fryer please pass a page to Jenkins when you have finished with it.”

“No! That is not necessary,” Mr. Fryer answered in an angry voice.

Prof picked up the phone and when Phyllis answered it said, “Please bring me a copy of the file that you have just brought me.”

“On my way,” Phyllis replied.

On receiving the file from her Prof handed the file to Jenkins who opened it and began to read.

It appeared to Prof that he had only read two pages when he stopped and turning to Mr. Fryer in a voice that showed his fear said, "I told you that we will never get away with this. I told you to stop Blake from groping and raping the girls. I told you that we would land in shit."

"Shut up. Shut your mouth," Mr. Fryer angrily yelled, "Do not say a word."

Jenkins sat still then proceeded to read further. Prof noted that as he read he began to perspire.

When Mr. Fryer closed the file he sat for a period of time staring at the floor. Then he looked at Prof and then shifted his glance to look at Dr. Maxton and Zen. With a sigh he said, "In the light of all of these statements I cannot deny what Blake has been doing. I have known about this and have tried to stop him but have got nowhere. He thinks because he is so big and strong that he can do as he likes. Well now gentlemen where do we go now."

"I must tell you Mr. Fryer I intend to send the form Z321/20 to the local police today. I cannot do otherwise," Dr. Maxton stated.

"My form Z321/20 will be given to the police in a short while together with the sworn statement that you have in your hands," Prof stated. "Please note that any attempts to interfere with the girls who made the statements will be seen in a very serious light." Prof paused and said, "Please wait for about 10 minutes as I need both of you to meet someone," Prof said.

He had scarcely spoken when the phone rang and on picking it up heard Phyllis say, "Jason Bellingham is here."

"Thank you," Prof said. He turned to Zen and said, "Please fetch Jason Bellingham."

Zen walked out of the room and soon returned followed by a man. The man walked up to Prof and greeted him and shook his hand.

Prof said, "Captain Jason Bellingham please meet Doctor Dylan Maxton the radiologist, Zen you know, Mr. Fryer Senior partner of Fryer, David and Malls and Jenkins the principal of Ellsworth High. After each introduction Bellingham went to each person and shook their hands. He then returned to stand next to Prof who said, "Gentlemen Captain Jason Bellingham the head of the child protection unit here in our town.

Jason Bellingham nodded his head at everyone and turning to Prof said, "I should have suspected that you would be involved in this case. It has to do with breasts. I got a file from Herman and Grant the law firm that took statements from the girls that had allegedly been groped by Blake. It appears as if those statements are only a scratch on the surface it seems that he has also committed a number of rapes. I spoke to a number of girls this morning and they all say that they received no sympathy or help from the school. The one girl actually said it felt to her that she was the perpetrator while Blake, who had groped her, was the hero."

"Well Jason you will get the form Z321/20 from Phyllis. Then it is over to you."

"Phyllis has already given me the form," Jason said. "I am on my way to the school to have a chat to a certain Blake about these accusations."

Interrupting Doctor Dylan Maxton said, "My Z321/20 is ready for you."

"Thanks I will collect it when I leave here," Captain Jason Bellingham stated.

"Jason, Mr. Fryer is Blake's father," Prof said.

"I thought so," Jason said. Then addressing Mr. Fryer

said, "I would appreciate it if you would accompany me to the school so that you can be present when I speak to Blake. You as a lawyer know the drill. So I am not going to spell it out unless you want me too."

"No Captain that will not be necessary," Mr. Fryer said. He got up and started to walk towards the door then stopped and asked, "Will it be OK if I went to the school under my own steam or must I travel with you Captain."

"Meet you at the school in the principal's office within ten, fifteen minutes." Jason replied. He then turned to Jenkins and said, "Mr. Jenkins you had better high tail it to your office as we will be meeting there to talk to Blake. I would also suggest that if Mr. Fryer is not your attorney you had better arrange for your attorney to be at the school pronto as the boys in blue will be calling to ask you why you condoned sexual assault on your girl learners. There seems to be a suggestion that you are implicated in the assaults. The boys in blue will want to talk to you about. May I suggest that you leave now?"

Without saying a word Jenkins got up and left the office. As he walked away Prof got the impression of a man walking to his execution.

"Well there goes a man who is about to be fired all because he is an arse creeper. One thing that I now have to arrange is for the girls that have been groped to receive counselling," Jason said. He paused and then said, "Wait lets go and fetch us a groper and teach him a lesson or two."

He walked towards the door then stopped and asked, "Professor will you have any problems if I ask you to come and talk to the girls who have been groped or maybe will be groped, about their breasts."

"No problem let me know when and where." Prof

replied.

“Thanx Professor,” Jason said as he walked out of the office.

“Give the bastard hell,” Zen called. She then walked out of the office.

Prof turned to Doctor Dylan Maxton and said, “Dylan I really appreciate your input today. I hope the bustard fries.”

“Today is the first time that I have felt so angry that I can do the bastard an injury,” Dylan said.

“What injury to who?” Ms. Shell asked as she walked into the room followed by Ms. Castle and Zen.

Prof introduced the two women to Doctor Maxton telling him that they were the mothers of Mary and Robin. After some small talk Dylan took his leave and Prof and Zen gave the women a thumbnail sketch of what had transpired in the meeting between Jenkins and Mr. Fryer and everyone else. Both women expressed their joy at the outcome.

Chapter 8

Early the next morning Prof cell phone rang and on answering it heard that it was Captain Jason Bellingham. In a voice that showed his anger Jason asked Prof if he had heard anything from his sources about Blake. When Prof stated that he had not heard a thing. He was surprised to hear Jason let rip with a selection of choice words not found in a dictionary. Then he muttered, "Sorry" and continued saying, "Blake has done a duck. Yesterday we went to the school and picked the bastard up. He pleaded innocence saying that he was only teasing the girls and that they all overreacted. He added that by complaining they hoped that he would feel them up again. He is a real piece of shit let me tell you. Well after we took him to the cop shop his father brought an urgent application to court asking that he be released into his custodianship. Of course the magistrate agreed to the request even though we opposed it saying that Blake was a flight risk. The magistrate ridiculed me for my comment and even went as far as to say I was paranoid. Then sometime last night he split and his father phoned me about half an hour ago saying that Blake was no longer in his care as he had left the house sometime during the night and did not know where he was. Man am I looking forward to appearing in court to ask for an arrest warrant for Blake. I will then remind the magistrate about my warning and his comments about me being paranoid."

Jason paused and then said, "Professor if you hear anything no matter how irrelevant please let me know. I want this bastard very badly."

"Will do," Prof answered. "I want him just as badly as

you do so do not worry we will find him.”

Just after that Jason rang off and Prof immediately called Robin's number up and dialled it. When she answered he told her about Blake's disappearance and was surprised when she said that she had expected something like that. When Prof questioned her as to why she was so sure that Blake would do a duck she replied saying that Blake had always bragged that no law could touch him as his father would get him free come hell or high water. Prof told Robin that he wanted her to speak to Jason and tell him what she had told him.

After he had rung off from Robin he called Jason and told him what Robin had said and gave him Robin's number. Jason was pleased to get the info saying that he could now make sure that Mr. Fryer, lawyer or not would enjoy some free board and lodging. Adding that he was sure that it was not the type of free board and lodging that he would appreciate.

Prof and Zen spent the day at a breast clinic and on the way back to the office listened to the news on the car radio. They were both interested in a news item that stated that the police were on the lookout for a learner from the local high school who was wanted in connection with sex crimes. No names or any further information was available according to the report.

Zen was particularly pleased with the news and said she hoped that someone would grope his balls.

The next morning Prof was surprised to find the whole front page of the Daily Information, the local daily

newspaper, was covered by the story of the serial sex offender at the high school. As he read the newspaper Prof became aware that Blake had not only groped breasts but had also committed a number of rapes. The newspaper had a photo of Jenkins and stated that he had been arrested on a charge of perverting the ends of justice by not reporting the actions of the sex offender even though he had all the proof needed that the sex offender was injuring the girls at school. There was also a piece about the arrest of one of the town's prominent lawyers on the charge of aiding and assisting a fugitive escape the police.

As he was sitting reading the front page of the newspaper with Zen reading over his shoulder, Robin, Mary and both mothers came charging into the office. Without stopping Robin nearly ran Prof out of the ground as she hugged and then kissed him. She bubbled as talked fast. Prof tried to stop her but she just kept on talking. He winked at Ms. Castle and then bent down and lifted Robin's face upwards by lifting her chin and then bent and kissed her on the lips. The result being that Robin had to stop talking.

When he stepped out of the kiss he said, "That always works with Mary-Louse and I am glad to see it works with you Robin. Now take a deep breath and start again slowly. We do not have a train to catch."

"Sorry! Professor. Sorry!" Robin said, "The captain came to see me after I spoke to him about what Blake had said. The captain then asked me if I could think of anywhere where Blake could be. Without thinking I told the Captain that Blake was at home as he was hiding there. The captain asked me how I knew and I said that it was

obvious that if Blake hid at home his parents could look after him. I also told the captain that by hiding at home he was safe as that was the last place that the police would search.” Then giggling said, “The captain then kissed me on the cheek and left in a hurry.” Continuing giggling Robin added, “He is not as good as my older lover who kisses me to shut me up!”

Before she could say anything else her cell rung. Saying, “Excuse me,” she opened the cell and said, “Robin here, who is that?..... Captain you found him..... Where did you say he was hiding?..... Under the bed..... The stupid arsehole..... Please do me a favour captain..... Please grip the bastard by the balls and squeeze..... If you cannot do that please let me come and do that..... No problem..... Thank you Captain. See you soon.”

Closing the phone Robin said, “That was Captain Bellingham who said that they had found Blake and that he was in custody and was not going anywhere.”

“That’s good news,” Mary said. “I hope they lock him up and then throw the keys away.”

Before she could say anything else Robin’s cell once again yelled for attention. Uttering “Sorry,” she opened the cell and said, “Robin here, who is that?” She listened for a moment and then in a demanding anxious voice said, “Did he really.How do you know..... Where?..... In his car..... I feel so sorry for his wife.... Thank you for letting me know.”

Robin closed her cell and looked at everyone and it was obvious that she was shocked.

My Melody

Her mother walked towards her and asked, “Are you alright Robin? What’s wrong?”

“That was Bianca she has just told me that they have found Snigger’s body at the dam. He had committed suicide in his car by shooting himself.”

“Jenkins committed suicide,” Ms. Shell said. “I did not think that he had enough guts to do such a thing. Well anyway that saved him the humiliation of standing trial and going to prison.”

They discussed the case for a while longer then Zen said, “Prof please kiss Robin goodbye as we have a waiting room full of people who want you to touch, but not grope, their breasts.”

Catching the hint Robin, after getting her kiss, led the others out of Prof’s office.

Prof saw the last client just after fifteen hundred and then sitting behind his desk said, “Zen now I want to draw up a detailed camp plan. I do not want it to be a nothing camp I want the new girls to learn all about breasts and all things related to breasts. That should be anatomy, position, movement, size, shape, breastfeeding, breast conditions, breast cancer, bras and bralessness. SBE, Self breast examination. Sex and breasts, Breast acceptance, Breast love, breast hate, breast fetish, and breast pride.” Can you think of anything else?”

“Prof do you remember my reaction to my breasts when we first met?” Zen asked.

“Oh! Yes,” Prof answered. “You nearly had a cadenza when I recommended that you go braless to help break up the Fibroadenoma that you suffered from. I must admit that I could never understand that as you have told me that you go topless at home.”

“That is something different. That is home at the kraal not here in the city. That whole incident caused me to take a look at my breasts and I found that they were something wonderful and beautiful,” Zen replied. She paused and then continued saying, “Prof I would like to suggest that you use this camp to get the girls to love their breasts. Do you remember when I came to see you after you challenged me to find out about breasts and I took my top off? I then was so comfortable with my breasts that I sat and talked to you for a long time topless not realizing that my breasts were uncovered. That whole episode changed my attitude towards breasts in the city and led me to be doing the most wonderful job in the world,”

“Yes I remember that occasion,” Prof commented. “I was so surprised at your acceptance of your breasts. It was actually a nice surprise, that you changed your perspective towards your breasts.”

“Prof that is why I feel that we from the beginning must make each of these girls love their breasts and love working with breasts,” Zen said.

“Come with suggestions,” Prof asked.

“Well I want to suggest that we divide the 3 days into certain sessions. Please do not be angry with me Prof but I want to recommend that we, I say we because I will be

there, have a panties day,” Zen said.

“A panties day? That sounds interesting,” Tell me more,” Prof requested.

“Prof I must admit that I have thought about this camp a lot as to me it is going to make or break our research unit. This is how I see the panties day. We meet at eight as if to start the day normally and you give each of us a package with body paints and tell us that we have forty five minutes to decorate our breasts. That is all you say and you do not answer questions but walk away and leave us girls to sort the thing out and to decorate our breasts. At eight forty five you call us all together and we have to parade our decorated breasts in front of everyone explaining why we decorated out breasts in that fashion. After that you then talk about breast along the lines of sex and breasts, breast acceptance, breast love, breast hate, breast fetish, and breast pride. Remember that during this time all the girls will be sitting with painted breasts. Then you break for tea and send us to go and shower and clean up. Remember that this is at ten thirty so we have been sitting for an hour and three quarters with open breasts. Then when we return you teach SBE. Self Breast Examination. To teach that properly the girls must strip to panties and that is the way that we will spend that rest of the day. Come five in the afternoon the girls will be so used to being topless that it will be second nature to them and they will have found out breasts are normal and something to be proud of.”

“You sound as if you have thought the day through,” Prof said. “I love the idea. Grab a seat and let’s draw up a detailed program for the camp. Please Zen join me so we can make sure that the girls develop a pride in their breasts

that they can convey to others.”

“Please Prof excuse me talking again but I would like to suggest that you invite Melody, Robin, Mary and Keera Scott to spend time on the first day with us. That will make the girls very aware of what they are getting into,” Zen said.

“I can understand Melody, Robin and Mary but why Keera Scott?” Prof inquired.

“She is going to have her beautiful breasts removed because she does not want breast cancer. That will be quiet a lesson for the girls. You can bring each one before the girls and talk about each case and get the person to talk about her case and her situation. If that does not drive the facts that breasts are life to the girls nothing will,” Zen said. She paused and then said, “Prof you are going to have to emphases that tits, boobs, boobies, hooters etc, are a no, no at work and the only acceptable term is breasts.”

“Good point,” Prof said, “Sit down lets plan the camp. Oh by the way I do see a problem. Melody has asked that we do not talk about her condition.”

“No problem,” Zen said, “We use Melody to demonstrate the pregnant woman also get breast problems and show that the problem can affect the foetus. We can do that without revealing Melody’s condition.”

About an hour later Phyllis and Cherie walked into the office and Phyllis asked. “Are you two not going home today? What have you been doing? No wait let me withdraw my last question. If you answer it maybe we will

be shocked. So I withdraw the question as to what you have been doing for the past hour or so. I must say it is a long time to have been doing whatever you have been doing.”

Laughing Zen said, “Jealousy will get you nowhere.”

“Both of you sit down and listen,” Prof said and waited until they were seated then began to read. “Day 1. 08.15 leave office. 09.30 arrive at Avontur settle in. 10.00 tea. 10.30 Opening and breast names. 11.00 Breast anatomy and position. 11.30 Breast movement, size and shape and breast acceptance. 12.30 Lunch with guests. 14.00 Visiting speakers. 15.00 Tea. 15.30 Visiting speakers. 17.30 River cruise. 19.30 Supper.

Prof looked at everyone and asked, “OK so far?”

“It sounds a wow!” Cherie said.

Prof nodded and then read further, “Day 2. 08.00 Breast decoration. 08.45 Breast demonstration. 10.00 tea. 10.30 SBE. That is Self Breast Examination. 12.30 Lunch. 14.00 Breast conditions. 15.00 Tea. 15.30 Breast cancer. 16.15 Bras and breast cancer. 17.30 Swim in heated pool. 19.30 Supper. 20.15 night ramble.” Prof stopped and looked at Phyllis and Cherie.

“Prof what is Breast decoration?” Cherie asked.

“Breast decoration?” Prof repeated. “Breast decoration. Did I say that. I don’t know. I will have to find out.”

“Sounds as if we will find out there,” Phyllis

commented.

Without a further comment Prof proceeded to read saying, "Day 3. 08.00 Breast feeding. 08.45 Bras and bralessness. 09.30 Sex and breasts. 10.00 Tea. 10.30 Breast acceptance. 11.00 Breast love. 11.45 Breast hate. 12.30 Lunch. 14.00 Breast fetish 15.00 tea. 15.30 Breast pride. 16.30 Pack up. 17.00 Head for home."

"It is seven sleepies till we go. I hope that they pass quickly. Just listening to the program it is going to be wonderful," Phyllis said.

"Prof I am so looking forward to the camp. I have been here for nearly 4 years and I really know nothing about breasts. Now at least I am going to learn all about breasts and I am looking forward to that." Cherie said.

"Well lets go home," Prof said, "I am sure that your husbands and boyfriends are waiting for you angry with me that I have kept you all overtime."

"Husbands and boyfriends?" Phyllis commented. "You have a dream Prof. I reckon that there is not a single boyfriend or husband between the 3 of us."

"Well if that is true there are a lot of stupid men out there," Prof commented

"Thank you Prof," Cherie said.

Just before Prof left the office he phoned, Mrs Castle and Mrs Shell and told them about the award from Breast International. He then explained about the appointment of the breast researchers and asked their permission to allow

My Melody

Robin and Mary to come to camp so that he could talk to the new researchers about actual cases. Both mothers agreed to allowing the girls to go to camp without a problem. He then phoned Keera Scott and spoke about the opening camp. When he invited her to come and meet the research assistants and asked her permission to tell the researchers about her condition so that they realize that they are dealing with actual cases. Keera agreed to come to the camp and to meet the new girls and to allow Prof to discuss her cases. Keera Scott said that she would like to talk to the girls herself. After a moments thought Prof agreed to her request.

Prof then phoned Melody and invited her to the camp. After explaining about the appointment of the research assistants he told her that he would not discuss her case with them but that he wanted her to be present to indicate that a pregnant woman can have a breast problem. Melody indicated that she did not have a problem and would love to come to the camp.

The following day Ms. Scott offered to drive all the others out to the camp. He thanked her for her willingness to aid and was pleased to hear that she said that it was important that the breast researchers learnt all about breasts from others.

A day later Ms. Castle came and saw Prof and requested that he please go and talk to Robin's class about her condition and operation. Prof agreed and it was arranged that he would speak to the class the following day in their lifestyle period.

\Ms. Castle and Robin met Prof and Zen at the school

gate and accompanied them to the principal's office. There Ms. Castle introduced Prof and Zen to Mr. Westgate the deputy principal who was acting principal in Jenkins place. While he was in the principal's office Captain Jason Bellingham arrived and announced that he was going to attend the lecture.

Mr. Westgate took Prof and the rest to a classroom and introduced Prof. In a easy casual voice Prof spoke about breasts and breast conditions. Then sort of in passing he spoke about Robin and her condition explaining what operation she had had. He pointed out that although she was breast-less she was still a girl. He also spoke about her prosthesis bra and why she wore it. He ended off by saying that each member of the class had to make a decision about Robin. They had to decide do they accept her as she is or reject her and make fun of her and go about spreading stories about her and her condition.

At the end of the talk Prof asked if there were any questions. A brief moment of silence followed then a tall well built boy stood up and thanked Prof for his talk. He then said that he had 2 questions and a comment that he wanted to make.

Prof asked his name and encouraged him to ask the questions.

"Professor my name is Taren," the boy said, "My first question is, what's Robin's prognosis? My second question has nothing to do with Robin but I would like to know if any of the girls that Blake hurt will have permanent breast injury. Then my last comment is addressed to the class and that is God help any of you that demean or insult Robin.

Thank you Professor.

“Thank you for your questions and comments, Taren,” Prof replied and continued saying, “As to Robin’s prognosis. So far tests after the operation have shown Robin had a normal prognosis. In other words she should live to a fine old age. With regards your second question will any of the groped girls have permanent breast damage? Taren as far as I can ascertain there will be no permanent damage to any of the girl’s breasts although some will carry the marks of the groping for the rest of their lives.”

“I am pleased to hear that,” Taren said adding “I better not meet Blake or I will do him a damage that he will always remember.”

Before Prof could react a girl raised her hand. Prof asked her name and asked her to ask her question.

“Professor my name is Georgia,” the girl replied. “I would like to know why boys are breast mad?”

“Georgia that is a good question and to me has two sides to it,” Prof replied. “The first side is that girls encourage boys to be breast mad by flouting their breasts and they are helped by the media who play on girls breasts make boys just want to get to know breasts. Then the second side is that boys are conditioned from young to be breast mad because they are taught that breasts are something mystique and forbidden.” Prof paused and then said, “Georgia let me tell you that if all you girls came to school topless for a week the boys would go gaga for that first day but by day three not one boy would be interested in any of your breasts as the mystique of the breasts would

have disappeared. This has been shown in all the places where going topless is the norm.”

“Professor does that mean that when breasts become common and an everyday object and not hidden people do not worry about breasts?” Georgia asked.

“Yes that is correct,” Prof replied.

“So that is why the girls in the rural areas can go topless and not be ogled the whole time except by visitors to the area,” another girl said.

“Correct,” Prof said, “Anymore questions.”

When there were none Mr. Westgate got up and thanked Professor for the talk and then led the visitors out of the classroom. There Robin hugged and kissed Professor saying thank you. As she stepped away from Prof she turned to Mr. Westgate and said, “Sir, Professor is my older lover. Don’t you think I am very lucky?”

Just after Prof began to drive to the office Zen began to giggle. Prof asked her to explain her giggles. Between giggles she said, “Prof did you see Mr. Westgate face when Robin told him that you were her older lover. I thought that he was going to swallow his tongue and that his eyes would pop out of their sockets. You know what Prof when one sees her hug and kiss you then one can easily believe that you are her older lover.”

“I would be so lucky,” Prof commented to a giggling Zen.

Chapter 9

Prof, Zen, Phyllis and Cherie walked into the converted lecture room just after 08.00 on the 1st to find that all the girls were in the room. Prof noted that the girls had each confiscated a desk and had put their handbags and other items on the desks.

After Prof greeted everyone he said that they must take a seat as he wanted to talk to them. The new girls all sat behind their desks with the other girls all grabbing a spare chair and manoeuvred them so that everyone looked at Prof.

Prof spoke saying, “Good day everyone welcome to the Breast Cancer Research Unit. I am very pleased that all of you have decided to join us here. Please note that working here is not working in an office or anywhere else. We work differently and have a different approach to things. Here our work centres on breasts. We work with, talk about, touch, and measure and examine breasts. Nothing about breasts is off limits. You will be asked to do all type of jobs that have breasts as the result. Today you will settle in. Phyllis will see each of you and help you register yourself with Breast International so that you can be paid at the end of the month. She will also help you with all other things like medical aid, signing for your lap top which becomes your responsibility from the second you have signed on the dotted line. Please girls let’s look after our goods.”

Prof paused and then said, “With regards to the next three days. Well tomorrow we leave at 08.15 from here. Please make sure that all of you are on time. You will be required to bring along clothes etc. for the three days. And

you will also be responsible for headache tablets and any other medicine that you think that you will need. Please ensure that you have a bathing costume. If you want to you can bring something sweet to chew on but that is not really necessary as the meals will be more than adequate. Then lastly please bring along with you your good nature and your want to learn. We are going to spend the three days talking about and living breasts.”

Once again Prof paused and then said, “Please ask any questions about anything that is related to the job and I will try to solve it.”

“Professor how must we dress when we are working?,” Carline asked.

“Good question Carline,” Prof said, “Each of you will find three white lab coats on your desks. one you wear, one for the wash and one on standby. What you wear under the white lab coat is your choice. I will let you into a secret I know a girl who always wears a white coat at work and depending on the weather wears different things under her white coat. Sometimes it is jeans and a jersey. Other times it is shorts and a halter top. Then when it has been really hot she just wears a panties. So it is your choice. You wear what is comfortable for you to wear. Remember what you wear is your own choice and you and you alone are responsible for what you wear.”

Giggling Carline asked, “Professor can we wear nothing under the coat?”

“That is your choice Carline. If you want to be nude under your lab coat that is your choice,” Prof replied.

“Excuse me for interrupting but something completely different,” Zen said. “We who work here are too lazy to say Professor all the time so we call out boss man Prof. Please also use that form of address.”

“You heard the lady,” Prof said. “Now just a comment about the working huarache here. They say I am the boss man and under me we have 3 legs. Leg 1 is Zen who is my second in charge. Then leg 2 is Phyllis and Cherie who do the administration work here. Then leg 3 is the research section which is the four of you. We are different legs but are all one body. Please do not try to rock the boat.”

Prof stopped and then said, “Now to your first research task. We are going to start by investigate bra wearing amongst girls between the age of 18 and 23. I will not go into details now but just so you know what’s ahead. Do any of you have any questions?”

When no questions were forth coming Prof said, “It’s now over to Phyllis who will undertake all the administration work and get you all registered as new staff. Zen and I are on the way to a breast clinic. Remember if any of you have a problem please write the problem out in triplicate and give it to Phyllis who will send it to me at the South Pole marked for my attention. When I get there I will read the problem and then reply via the North pole where you can collect your answer.”

With that Prof nodded at the girls and walked out of the room followed by Zen.

Prof arrived at the office at 07.30 on the 2nd he found

that all the girls were already there. From the vibe he picked up he realized that they were all excited yet apprehensive with regards as to what lay ahead. Phyllis said that the bus that she had arranged for transport would be arriving at 08.00. While waiting Prof phoned Keera Scott and checked with her if all was well with regards to coming to the Camp. Keera told Prof that she had taken a drive out to Avontur the previous weekend to make sure that she knew where to go. She added that she was looking forward to spending time with him and his research team.

Just after 08.00 they left for Avontur and on arrival Prof assigned each girl to a single room and told everyone to settle in and to report for tea at 10.00. At 10.30 Prof spoke to everyone about the camp and explained that the aim was to make them all comfortable with their and others breasts. He spoke about the influence that breasts have on the lives of people. He ended off the session by saying that there were more than 1100 names for breasts. He then mentioned as examples, lo los, Willy wonkas, chesticles, humps, bosom, hooters, second base, tits, melons, Num Num's, Jugs, Boo Boos and said that there were still about another 1090 names out there. He also emphasised that in the workplace the only acceptable name was breasts and nothing else.

With a giggle Carline said that it sounded that breasts were important as they had so many names.

In the 11.00 session Prof discussed breast anatomy as well as breast position. He caused a sensation by saying all that he was going to discuss about the breast of the woman pertained to the breast of the man. He was emphatic in saying that there was no anatomical difference between the breast of a woman and the breast of the man. He pointed out that the woman's breast was bigger because she had the hormone estragon in her body. He also pointed out that

My Melody

about 12% of women had more than 2 breasts and that 17% of women had more than 2 nipples. At that Myola stated that she had an extra nipple on her left breast. She added that she had not told anyone about it as in her culture having an extra nipple or breast was considered to be a sign of a witch. The 11.30 session was dedicated to breast movement, breast size and shape. Prof spent time explaining that all women's breasts looked the same because all bras had the same shape and forced the breast into an unnatural position. He used as example the fact that 5 of the 7 of them all presented with the same breast presentation because they were wearing bras and if their bras were removed then the breasts would present differently. He ended the session by stating that very few women, an estimated less than 20%, had breast acceptance as a large proportion of women found fault with their breasts.

Prof was just coming to the end of the session when he heard a car driving up. He sent Zen to fetch their visitors. Zen returned leading Melody, Robin, Mary and Keera Scott into the room where the lecturers were taking place and the necessary introductions were made.

Just after that everyone went for lunch that Sarah described as scrumptious. After lunch everyone lounged around the paddle pool and just relaxed. Prof was interested to note that the girls included the visitors in their discussion. Just before 14.00 he called the visitors and told them that he was going to take them one at a time to talk to the girls. He said that the order would be Robin, Mary, Melody, and then Keera.

He ask Robin to follow him and told the rest to relax

by the pool side. As he walked with Robin she stopped Prof and said, “Prof is this prosthesis bra and brunet wig alright?”

“It’s absolutely perfect,” Prof replied.

He led Robin into the room where the lectures were taking place and after making sure that everyone knew Robin told them about the fact that she had had a double mastectomy and that she was on chemo and radiation. He emphasised the fact that due to proper research they had caught Robin’s condition early and that her prognosis was very good. At the end of his explanation he asked Robin if she wanted to say something.

Robin looked at Prof then turning to the girls said, “I must tell you that Prof is my older lover and I want to show you what he did for me to save me.” With that she pulled her T-shirt that she was wearing and then standing in her bra slowly turned around so that the girls could see her from all angles. When she faced the girls again she unclipped the front clasps of the bra and to gasps from the girl’s remover her prosthesis bra to revel her breast-less chest. Standing proudly Robin said, “I am sure that not one of you thought that I did not have breasts. All of you saw me as a normal girl with breasts but back at the ranch. You are all going to do breast research and you will contribute to finding a cure for my disease.”

Without further comment she removed her wig to show her hairless head. She stood like that for a moment then replaced her wig and then put her prosthesis bra on and pulled her T-shirt on. When she was finished she said, “See I have got beautiful titties and a full head of hair. Anyone

My Melody

want to argue.” She then hesitated and added, “A while ago a boy groped my tits and as a result tore my prosthesis breast out of the right cup and caused extensive wounds and pain. I was lucky that Prof, my older lover was able to help me and put me and my tits together again.”

Silence descended after Robin had spoken and Prof asked if there were any questions.

“Robin were you involved in what the newspaper reported on the groping at Ellsworth High,” Carline asked.

“Yes I was involved. I told you that my breast had been torn off and it happened at the school,” Robin said.

“I hope the bastard burns in hell,” Carline said with force.

When Prof thanked Robin for her contribution she turned and put her arms around him and kissed him on the lips. With a smile she said, “see that is how I greet my older lover.” Then she turned to the girls and blew them a kiss and thanked them for listening to her.

Prof brought Mary into the room to replace Robin. He spoke about the fact that she had been groped so badly that she still had bruises even though it was 17 days since the groping incident. He explained about the breast tissue injury and then told the girls how they had lifted fingerprints off of Mary’s breasts. He then asked Mary to talk to the girls.

Mary immediately spoke about how cheap she felt after the groping and how she was rely broken when the principal told her that she was over reacting. She told

about the friends who had helped bring the groper to court. She also spoke about having her photo's taken to provide evidence against the groper. Then she ended off by saying that she did not wear a bra anymore as she found that a bra hurt her. She said that the camisole that she wore gave her more than enough protection and support. Giggling she said that she was sure that some of the listeners did not know that she was braless."

During question time Myola asked if she was braless at that time. Mary did not answer her but just flashed her breasts so that all could see that she was braless.

After afternoon tea Melody spoke to the girls. Before she entered the room she asked Prof if she could talk to the girls and he agreed. Clear, concise and to the point Melody spoke about her dream of being pregnant and then getting pregnant. She told about ignoring the lump in her breast until it was too late. She then told about the choice that she had to make. Go for treatment, baby dies and she becomes sterile or refuse treatment and she dies but baby lives." As she mentioned the choice Prof watched the girls. They was all memorised by Melody's story and he saw that tears were flowing freely down Carline cheeks and Sarah was blowing her nose.

When Melody had told her story she added, "Please do not feel sorry for me. Each of you are starting to work as breast research assistants and you each have the opportunity to ensure that the research work that you are going to do can contribute towards finding the cause and the cure of this horrible illness. I most likely will see all of you from time to time. May you all do well in this new venture? Thank you for listening to me."

My Melody

As Melody stood up from where she was sitting Carline got up out of her chair and walked up to Melody and put her arms around her and in a voice that was tear laden said, “Melody you are the most wonderful woman in the world. Thank you for teaching me that I can do something for others.”

Melody responded by hugging Carline and saying, “Just get a cure.”

Prof gave the girls a break after Melody had left the room and walked to where Melody was standing just outside the room. When Prof stopped next to her she said, “I do not know why I told them. Before I knew what I was doing I was speaking to them all about it. I was not going to do that but it just came bubbling out. Do you know what Prof I am so glad that they know? Maybe it will help them to realize the importance of their work. Please do not be angry with me.”

Prof did not say a word but stepped towards Melody and enfolded her in his arms as he hugged her and kissed her on the forehead. All he said was, “You are the best.”

Prof then stepped out of the hug and took hold of Melody’s hand led her to the pool side where he left her with the others and walked back to the room with Keera. She had also indicated that she would talk to the girls. On hearing that she wanted to address the girls Prof wondered how she would approach the subject.

Keera did not wait for Prof to introduce her she walked to stand in front of the girls and in silence slipped the

shoulder straps of her summer dress off her shoulders and allowed the dress to flow down to land in a pool at her feet. As a result of the action she stood in front of the girls only dressed in skin coloured tango panties. Then she introduced herself and began to speak saying that she was 27 years old and told how breast cancer had destroyed her family by taking her Mother and oldest sister and having her remaining sister diagnosed with breast cancer some 4 months previously.

She went on to explain that she had been doing readings and studies into breast cancer. She told how she had come across a number of articles about the familiarly nature of breast cancer. There it was stated that if the mother has breast cancer then there is a plus 80% chance that the daughters will also suffer from the disease. In her family that has proved to be true. 2 out of 3 daughters have already been diagnosed with breast cancer. In a soft voice she said, "I want to emphatically state that having seen how breast cancer has ravaged the woman in my family I do not want to get breast cancer. To this end I requesting that Professor perform a double mastectomy on me. In other words he must remove my breasts which he will do in 10 days time."

Keera then slipped her hands under her breast and lifted them up and said, "They look so beautiful and so healthy. When one see them like this one can understand why men love boobs. But as usual looks deceive. My boobs look so healthy yet within them the potential to develop breast cancer is very, very real. I know that we all have to die, that is life, but I would rather die from something else than breast cancer. I have seen 2 of my family already die from it and my sister will most likely soon also die from

the disease.”

She then bent down took hold of her dress and pulled it into position slipping the shoulder straps over her shoulder. When she was dressed she smoothed her dress and pulled it right then she looked at each girl then asked, “Please could I have some questions?”

“Excuse me Keera did I understand you correctly. Are you going to have both your breasts removed to prevent breast cancer?” Sarah asked.

“Yes that is correct. I look upon it as breast cancer prevention,” Keera replied.

“How do you feel about that?” Rayleigh asked.

“As you can imagine, to get to the place where I made the decision to go for the operation took many a sleepless night and a lot of sweat and tears. But having weighed everything up and having seen my mother and sister die and seen my other sister go for chemo and radiation it just made sense that I should skip that. I must say that once I made my decision my life became easier. I now know that I have made a decision and I know the result of my decision is. It is not a dark unknown future but a future that for me is full of life and a promise of a full life ahead. Oh! But you say what if you were not destined to get breast cancer. Well that we will never know. Our Professor, who as all of you know, is regarded as one of the best breast cancer specialist’s researchers in the world, could not guarantee that I would not get breast cancer. So I decided better to be safe than sorry.”

After that no more questions were asked and so Prof thanked Keera for her input. He told her to get the others together as the sunset cruise would start at 17.30 and then supper would be served at 19.30 and then they will kick them out to drive home safely.

After Keera left Prof summarised the speaker's comments and told the girls that the work that they were to undertake would have some impact on their visitors conditions. He ended off the day by asking for questions or comments.

"Prof will we be working with people who have the same type of conditions as what we saw this afternoon?" Myola asked.

"Myola I want to give you a yes no answer, yes sometimes, no not at all," Prof said.

With a giggle Myola said, "Thank you Prof for that answer. You have made the water as clear as mud."

"You beaut," Prof said. "Remember that answer and in about 20 to 2000 years time the muddy water will become very clear."

"Now girls if there is nothing else please get ready for the sunset cruise. As you heard the speakers of this afternoon will be going with us and will stay and have supper with us. Please make them feel welcome," Prof said.

The Sunset cruise was a leisure cruise up the river in a type of pontoon built boat. They all sat in easy chairs and relaxed. Prof was pleasantly surprised to note that when drinks were offered no one took an alcoholic drink. Most

My Melody

people drank soft drinks with a few drinking fresh fruit juices.

During the cruise they were lucky enough to see a fish eagle swoop down and pluck a fish out of the water just a few meters off the port bow of the boat. Cherie was ecstatic at have seen the fish eagle.

Melody came and sat next to Prof and noted that he was looking at Zen. She reached out and touching Prof said, “Yes she is a fantastic woman. Just right for you. I love to watch the love relations between the two of you. If my guess is right I would think that neither of you have told the other how you feel. Don’t leave it to late to wake up. You will miss a lot of loving time.” With that Melody stood up and touched Prof on the shoulder and walked away.

After Melody left Prof sat and considered her words and did not know what to think so he pushed the thoughts out of his mind.

Directly after the Sunset cruise they were all accompanied to the dining room where a buffet supper was served. The meal was enjoyed in an atmosphere of relaxation and friendship.

After supper the group saw the speakers off and the girls heard Robin say as she hugged and kissed Prof, “Good night my older lover sleep well and dream of me as I sleep with you.”

Melody took hold of Prof’s hands and said, “I am not going to apologise for my comments about you and Zen. I

Cecil R

know that I am right and I know that you two will soon connect. Prof I know that she is right for you.”

Prof watched Melody walk up to Zen say something to her and then kiss her on the lips. After that still holding onto Zen she waved at Prof before going to the car.

Chapter 10

After a full English breakfast the girls met in the room where they had spent the previous day. As Prof walked into the room Carline asked, “Prof are you going to be so hateful today? I hardly slept last night. All I could see was Robin, Mary, Melody and Keera. Every time I closed my eyes I saw one of them talking to me. Prof I had to take a long hard look at my relationship with my breasts. As you know I don’t care about them. They are there and if I can use them for my own gain I do so without a problem. But after yesterday I will have to rethink my attitude towards my breasts. Prof you brought them here just to talk to me. They did not talk to anyone else.”

“You are wrong!” Rayleigh said, “I also had many sessions during the night with those girls. I asked myself what I would have done if I was in Melody’s position or in Keera’s place. I wondered if I would not have sat in a corner and cried until I drowned in my tears.”

“I have often worried about having an extra nipple,” Myola said, “But after yesterday I do not care if I have 10 or more nipples. I cannot tell you all what listening to them yesterday did to me. My breasts have not meant anything to me but now they are so important. I must say those women taught me so much more than I can ever understand. I am so glad that I am going to work with breasts.”

Without a pause Sarah said, “Yesterday I learnt what it means to be proud of your breasts. I watch in amazement as one after the other talked with pride about their breasts or in the case of Robin about her prosthesis breasts. You

know I have never allowed any man to see my breasts. I have always been proud yet ashamed to display my breasts. To me they are monstrosities yet I love them but last night as I lay thinking about the day I suddenly realized that these breasts are mine. They are what I have got. So I must accept them as they are mine and I must treat them as if I am proud of them and I am now proud of them.”

A period of silence followed and Prof broke it by asking if anyone else had any comments to make about what had happened the previous day.

Cherie spoke saying, “I have been working as the administrative assistant for Prof for the past 5 years or so and it was only yesterday that I realized what goes on in the department. I have been working where breasts are the norm and it was only yesterday that I realized it. Last night I asked myself what I thought of my breasts and realized that I could not answer that question. Up until yesterday I had never thought about my breasts. Then suddenly Mary brought me down to earth with a bump then she told how she had been groped. My breasts are about the same size as hers and I had to ask myself if I would talk about the incident if it had happened to me. I realized my answer would be no. I would have kept quiet and hoped that what happened would have gone away.”

A brief period of silence followed and then Phyllis said, “I make the appointments, see the clients come in and out and that is that. Yesterday for the first time I realized that I was dealing with real women. Women with breasts and I had to have a look at my breasts. My breasts sag and hang downwards and look like two bags just hanging on my chest. Then like all of the rest of the girls I had to look at

My Melody

my relationship with my breasts. I am ashamed to admit that my relationship stinks. I will definitely be working on that.”

Before Prof could say anything Zen said, “I am the only one that has not made a comment. I work closely with Prof so our visitors are well know to me but yesterday for the first time I had time to think what they are going through. About four five years ago I saw Prof as a patient and I did not like the way he forced me to take a look at my breasts. He jerked me in the mouth and as a result I found myself working with him and I must tell you that I have a wonderful relationship with my breasts.”

“Well it seems as if yesterday was quite a day,” Prof said. “Now we come to today. As you can see here on this table next to me are 7 holders. In the holders you will find a number of items that will help you undertake breast decoration. Please note you have until 09.30 to undertake the breast decoration. Then we will have a demonstration of the breast decoration.”

“Prof what is Breast decoration,” Rayleigh asked.

“Well in the holders you will find body paints and other odds and ends that you can use to decorate your own breasts. How you do it, what you do is your problem. All I want to see at 09.30 is decorated breasts. Please my request is that each of you work on your own and decorated your breasts alone. You can go to your own rooms and do the decorating there. So let’s get going. See you back here at 09.30.”

As Prof walked away he was aware that the girls were

sitting in their seats seeming to think. He walked out into the sunshine and wandered down to the river's edge where he found a upturned boat under a tree. He parked himself there and sat half asleep relaxing in the lovely day.

At about 09.15 Prof slowly raised himself and wonder back to the girls. As he came into the room he stopped and looked around. He was immediately aware of the fact that each girl was sitting in her own space. As he looked around he suddenly became aware that all the girls were only dressed in panties. All were barefoot and apart from the panties not another stitch of clothing was to be seen. As he looked around Zen caught his eye and smiled at him and winked. That told him that she had organized the panties day that she had spoken about. Glancing down he saw that she was wearing a tiny black tango panties showing that her womanhood was covered by a full bush of pubic hairs. Prof took the opportunity to check all the girl's panties out. Sarah was wearing white full panties that showed that she had a full bush of pubic hair. Prof was surprised to note that Myola was wearing a red tight tiny bikini pantie and saw that her pubic hairs curled around the seams of the panties. Looking at Carline he thought that she remained in character as she was wearing a tiny g-string that covered just about nothing. She was shaven as smooth as a babies bum. When she turned around he saw that the back-strap ran into her anal slit. Looking at Rayleigh he thought that she was also in character. She had a full panties on that sat loose on her body. He did a double take when he looked at Cherie. She had on a see through bikini panties but it had a butterfly attached that just about hid her womanhood. Phyllis wore a tiny bikini pantie that was blue in colour. As Prof reflected on the different panties worn by the girls he realized that so often the panties showed a hidden part of

the girl in more ways than one.

Prof greeted the girls saying that it was show time. He said that each girl had to come and stand in front of the others and display her breast decoration and then explain why she chose that breast decoration. He then asked Zen to come and open the show.

Zen walked to stand in front of everyone. Prof saw that she had used red body paint to paint her chest from her umbilicus to the shoulder line. She had then outlined her pair of small breasts that sat high on her chest with tiny dots that marked the outline of her breasts. Her small nipples was also marked with tiny white dashes and the outline of the areola was marked with a thin white line. The overall picture was of someone saying please look at my breasts I am proud of them.

After a moment Zen said, “I started by painting my breasts in red. Why? Well red to me is a royal colour. A colour that highlights something. Here the red highlights my breast area and asks you to look at them. Then by using the white paint I have outlined my breasts saying that people must take note of my breasts. They must see my breasts even though they are small they are mine and I am very proud of them. Then I have highlighted my nipple which is important as it will be used to feed my baby. Then the thin line around the areola shows that my breasts are normal and I hope the total effect say I think breasts are beautiful.”

Zen then raised her arm upwards and saying, “Thank You,” walked back to her seat.

“Thank you Zen,” Prof commented. “I must say that the picture presents exactly what you tried to show.”

“Now we will ask Sarah to present herself and her picture,” Prof said.

Sarah walked to the front to stand facing everyone. She had applied the body paint in such a manner to show that she was wearing a top that showed a lot of cleavage with the edge of the cleavage just passing the nipples. The top ended in the full white panties that she was wearing. She had painted the top a light blue that enclosed the nipples but in both cases a portion of the areola appeared to peep out of the top. Where the V of the top joined she had used a yellow blob to show that a button held the top together. The overall picture was pleasing to the eyes. Her breasts showed beautifully and the roundness of her big breasts were well shown.

It was immediately obvious that Sarah was shy and did not know what to expect. She turned red when Rayleigh said, “Sarah you have shown your breasts as magnificent breasts. Where can I buy a pair like that?”

Sarah softly said, “I have always been hypersensitive about my breasts, I sort of love and am proud off them but at the same time I am so ashamed of them because they are so big. They are so big and cover the whole of my chest. It always seems to me that when a boy looks at me he does not look at me but looks at my breasts. Then I come and get a job where I will be working with breasts and I am forced to reevaluate my relationship with my breasts. Until this moment no man has ever seen my nude breasts. I have always been too ashamed to show them. Then this morning

Prof said use the body paint to show your breasts. As I sat in my room I realized that I would love to show my breasts. As I had to use body paint I decided to go into showing my breasts bit by bit. So I painted this top with lots of cleavage. Maybe one day I will get enough courage to show all of my breasts for a man to see. Let me just say I am very proud of myself at this moment.”

“I should think that you have a reason to be proud,” Prof said.

“I would kill to have such beautiful breasts,” Phyllis said.

“Thank you Sarah for showing us that you are now accepting your breasts,” Prof said. He then looked at Cherie and said, “It’s your turn Cherie.”

Prof had to smile as Cherie walked towards him. She was wearing a see through bikini panties but it had a butterfly attached that sort of hid her partially shaven womanhood. Her pubic hair that could be seen what she moved in a certain way presented as a thin strip just above her genital slit. When Prof looked at her breasts he saw that her breasts were medium in size, firm and nicely round with small nipples and tiny areola. Using a multitude of colours Cherie painted a butterfly on each breast. The overall picture was that her womanhood and her breasts were covered by butterflies.

Standing proudly in front of everyone Cherie said, “I am one of those strange creatures that love to wear panties with something attached, it makes me feel sexy. I brought 5 pairs of panties to the camp and all have an attachment. When Prof said that we must decorated our breasts I was lost. I did not have a clue what to do. After Prof left us to

get on with the task and we discussed what to do. Zen suggested that we all just wear panties so that we were all dresses the same as we presented out breast decorations. I went back to my room and tried to think of something to do but drew a blank. Then I stripped down to my panties and saw that I was wearing my butterfly panties and that switched on a light in my head and so I made butterfly breast covers.”

Cherie stood still for a while and then added, “My breasts have never worried me. They have been there so what. Then yesterday I came slap bang up against my breasts. I had to look at my feelings towards my breasts. Robin hurt me so much. I have sent out the accounts to her medical aid on a regular basis. She was just another name in the people who saw Prof. Then I meet her and realize that she is such a wonderful and strong girl. This morning Rayleigh said she wondered if she would not have sat in a corner and cried until she drowned in her tears when she spoke about what effects our friends had on us yesterday. Well I also had that sort of reaction and so have made a decision that these breasts of mine are mine and I will be proud of them and look after them.”

“Well that is fantastic to hear,” Prof stated. “If all of you can become like Cherie and proud of your breasts then we will go far. Rayleigh it is your turn please.”

As Rayleigh walked towards Prof he took in the fact that her white full panties on sat loose on her body. He looked at the top of her body observing that she had covered the whole top of her body with alternate black and white wavy lines that ran at an about 45 degree angle from her panties to her shoulder line. The lines sort of swept over her elongated and half round shaped breasts. The

wavy black and white lines broke the contour of her hanging elongated breasts.

“Why black and white lines,” Rayleigh asked. “I must tell you all that during my interview for this position I told Prof and them that breasts did not matter to me. As you all know I love my Sari and when I wear it my tummy muscles are more important than my breasts. So I decided to show what my relationship with my breasts are. It is sort of wavy and neither black or white. My breasts are breasts and are there, so what. If you see them good if you do not see them, also good!”

“Thank you Rayleigh for being so completely honest,” Prof said. “Myola it’s your turn please

Myola walked proudly to Prof and he saw that she was wearing a tight bright red bikini panties that showed her pubic hairs curled around the seams of the panties. Looking up he noted that she had used bright red body paint to fashion a very small bra of bikini top. The bra just covered her small breasts and one could just see the outline of her areola that covered the whole front of the breast. There was just an indication of a tiny inverted nipple sitting high on her breasts.

Myola addressed everyone saying, “Breasts have never been a problem to me and I often go braless as well as often go topless. I do not care if others see my breasts. They are tiny yet I think that they are very beautiful and a part of my body that I am very proud of. If Prof had not said we were to decorate our breasts I would have walked in front of everyone only dressed in my panties.”

“Thank you Myola for your truthfulness with regards to your breasts. You have a very refreshing attitude towards them,” Prof said. He looked at Carline and just said, “Please.”

As Carline walked to the front Prof had the impression that she may as well have been nude. She had medium size round breasts that were firm and that stood away from her chest wall with the nipples pointing upwards, standing at attention. The whole of her chest was covered in green body paint except her breasts. Around each breast there was a yellow circle followed by a red circle. Then the rest of the area was green. Her breasts were completely free of body paint yet the rest of her front was covered in green body paint. The chest covering together with the fact that she was wearing a tiny g-string that covered just about nothing gave the impression of nudity.

Carline stood proudly in front of everyone and then slowly turned around. When she faced everyone she said, “I must have shocked the hell out of most of you the other day when we were talking about what to wear at work and I asked Prof if I could wear nothing under my lab coat. You see I hate clothes with a passion. If I had my way I would have chosen to appear without breast decoration and this itchy nothing panties. Yes in the nude. I love to go about nude and I do not care a damn who see me. If someone gets the jollies because they have seen me in the nude good for them. As you can see I have covered my chest except my breasts. Please remember that I am a naturalist and I believe in nudity but I hate people who see nudity as sex. I am not a jump on, fuck, fuck, jump off girl. To me that is private away from my nudity, very, very far away. I must say I am very proud of my body and will show it at every

opportunity I get as well as at every opportunity I do not get.”

Carline stopped and looked at Prof. He got the impression that she expected him to attack her point of view. With a smile he said, “Carline thank you for showing us and telling us why you are so comfortable with your breasts. Your attitude is totally refreshing. Thank you for taking all of us into your world of a beautiful body and above all a world where breasts are accepted as normal.”

Prof nodded at Carline and then said, “Well Phyllis it’s your turn now.”

Phyllis wearing tiny blue bikini panties walked to stand in front of the others. Looking at her breasts Prof observed that they sagged and hang downwards with the point completely covered by a dark areola and biggish pink nipples. Each breast displayed a brownish handprint that appeared to be holding the breast. Prof got the impression that someone was standing behind Phyllis and had wrapped their arms around her and had held onto her breasts leaving his handprints behind.

“I have been working in a breast unit for the past 5 years or so but yesterday was the first time that I knew that I was in a breast unit. I know Robin, Mary, Melody, Keera and the other 200 plus clients that Prof sees. I know them as people who I make appointments for but that is all. Yesterday I discovered that they were not just people who Prof saw but people with breasts. That jerked me in the mouth. I suddenly realized that the woman that came to see Prof all had one thing in common. Breast problem. Prof has never seen my breasts as I do not have a problem thank

the Lord. It made me reflect on my own breasts. I have never worried about them. I know that they are not round and sag but so what. When I was thinking about the breast decoration I thought how nice it would be to reflect the fact that someone loved my breasts so much that they wanted to hold them. Maybe by then holding my breasts I will also want to hold them in love.”

“Thank you Phyllis,” Prof said, “I must admit that both you and Cherie do a fantastic task in the breast unit but I never thought that you would wonder what went on with the patients. I love the idea of holding onto the breasts as one of love. You demonstrated it so well.”

Prof waited until everyone took their seats and then said, “This morning all of you have had an opportunity to show yourself and others what you think about your breasts. It has to me been a very wonderful exercise and thank you for your input. Now we are running a bit late on the program but that is not a problem. So go to tea and then go and have a shower and wash the body paint off and let’s meet here in 30 minutes time. Zen will then be talking and demonstrating SBE that is Self Breast Examination. Off we go.”

“Excuse me Prof,” Zen said, “Please everyone, please after your shower, just pull on a top that can easily be taken off. Then please it is once again panties only session because each of you will have to do the SBE on yourselves and it will have to be done on your nude breasts. Because this room does not have a full length mirror the talk will be given in my room. Admission is a chair for you to sit on. See you all in 30minutes time.”

Chapter 11

After tea everyone squeezed into Zen room. She stood next to the full, length mirror that adorned the one cupboard door and spoke saying, “I hope that all of you are comfortable as we are going to spend the next number of hours talking about and doing SBE that is Self Breast Examination. Please note that every one of you must know this off by heart and you must carry out the examination whenever you menstruate and you researchers must make sure that every woman that you involve in the research program knows SBE and that they carry it out. Remember that a woman who does SBE has a 80% chance of surviving breast cancer because she will discover the breast cancer in its early stages and then it can be successfully treated.”

Zen paused and looked at everyone then spoke again saying, “I am going to show you and demonstrate and talk about SBE. Then each of you will get up and come and stand in front of all of us and you will show, demonstrate and talk about SBE. Is that understood?”

Once again Zen made sure that everyone was listening. Then said, “Now comes the part that some of you may not like but that does not matter to me. We work with, touch and do other actions with breasts so it is important that we are comfortable with our breasts. Therefore the dress for this lecture is panties only. So please now, strip to your panties. Wait before you do that some of you will think that if I do that Prof will see my breasts and with the panties that I am wearing he will see my womanhood. When a woman comes to see Prof I take them behind a screen where they have to strip to panties and then they put on a gown to go and be examined. Well let me tell you that if

some of the woman wore the panties that Carline was wearing this morning then they would be overdressed. Some women come to see Prof wearing panties made from a spider web. They are so nothing. Then others arrive having forgotten to dress in panties. So breasts and womanhood are nothing new to Prof. To be crude, remember Prof sees more tits and cunts in a week than what you have hot meals in 6 months. So now ladies panties only if you please.”

Zen immediately pulled her T-shirt off to reveal that she was wearing green tango panties. The first one to stand up was Carline who immediately pulled off her T-shirt. Prod saw that she was wearing crotchless panties. The result was that her womanhood was clearly displayed. Prof immediately noted that she was completely at ease wearing that type of panties.

Prof looked around at the rest of the girls to see how they were dressed. Phyllis was wearing a g-string that had a diamond shape in front of her womanhood. Sarah was wearing a white Hi-cut panties, Myola was wearing a black bikini type panties with Rayleigh wearing a white full panties on sat loose on her body. Cherie was wearing yellow thong panties with a red heart attached to it sitting in front of her womanhood.

“That is better,” Zen said, “Before I start is there anything any of you want to know?”

“Please Zen I want to ask Carline a question that has nothing to do with SBE OK?” Sarah shyly asked.

“Go ahead,” Zen replied.

“Excuse me asking Carline,” Sarah said, “I have never seen a pair of crotchless panties before. What does it feel like? Doesn’t your fanny, Oh sorry. Does you womanhood not get cold?”

Giggling Carline said, “So far it never had. It is nice to feel the breeze flow over my womanhood.” She hesitated and then with a laugh said, “One thing I do not have to do is pull my panties down to piss. I just stand or squat and let go. No fuss or problem. It is easy.”

“I wonder if I will ever have the guts to wear such panties.” Sarah commented with a look of shock on her face. “Just think of pissing without pulling your panties down and not wetting them!”

“Just try and you will never wear another type of panties,” Carline said.

“Well! Keep us up to date about your panties, Sarah,” Zen said. She paused and then said, “If there is nothing else let’s do SBE. As I earlier said I will explain SBE in full. Then each of you will have to come and stand here in front and demonstrate that you can do the SBE totally and fully without a mistake. By the end of this session I want to make sure that SBE is so part of you that if I wake you up in the middle of the night and tell you to do SBE that you will immediately do it without a mistake.”

Making sure everyone was looking at her Zen said, “SBE has five steps. Step 1. Begin by looking at your breasts in the mirror with your shoulders straight and your hands on your hips.”

Zen moved to stand facing the full length mirror in the room and stood with her shoulders straight and placed her hands on her hips.

She then said, “Look at your breasts. While looking at them take note of the following:- are your breasts their usual size, shape, and colour. Then make sure that they are evenly shaped without visible distortion or swelling. While looking you must also note if there is any of the following changes:- Dimpling, puckering, or bulging of the skin or a nipple that has changed position or an inverted nipple that is a nipple that is pushed inward instead of sticking out. Then look for any Redness, soreness, rash, or swelling. If you find any of the things I have just mentioned bring them to your doctor's attention yesterday.”

Zen stopped and after glancing at everyone said, “Please I do not think that you are stupid but I am going to repeat what you must take note of when you look at your breasts in the mirror with your hands on your hips.” She then repeated the aspects that should be noted as a woman looked in the mirror with her hands on her hips.

Having run through what to look for she asked if there was any questions. When there were none Zen held a quiz asking the girls to say what they were to look at and what changes they were to notice.

After making sure that everyone knew what was what she said, “Now we go to Step 2. Now you raise your arms into the hands up position and look for the same changes.” As she spoke she carried out the actions standing looking into the mirror.

She stood with her hands up and said, “I know that we have run through these aspects before but let me repeat them. With your hands up you look at your breasts making

sure that they are their usual size, shape, and colour. Then check that they are evenly shaped without visible distortion or swelling. Watch for dimpling, puckering, or bulging of the skin. Then look at your nipple and see if it has changed position or become inverted nipple. Watch out for any Redness, soreness, rash, or swelling. Remember that if you find anything that you are not happy with see your doctor yesterday.”

Zen once again looked at each girl and then asked, “Can I please have any question?”

When none were forthcoming she said, “OK let’s do Step 3. Now you stand with your arms at your side and you once again look at your breasts. Now you look for any signs of fluid coming out of one or both nipples. This fluid could be a watery, milky, or yellow fluid and in some cases even bloody fluid. In other words check that there is nothing flowing from your nipples. Remember that the only time something should flow out of your nipple is when you are preggies or breastfeeding.”

“Anything,” Zen asked after looking at every one.

When no reply was forthcoming she said, “There we have the first 3 steps all done in front of the mirror. To do step 4 we have to lie down on a bed or something. I am going to lie on my bed and do the actions as I talk about what has to be done. Please watch my hand movements especially my finger tips.”

Zen lay down on her back on the bed and then said, “You now use your right hand to feel your left breast and then your left hand to feel your right breast. You must use a firm, smooth touch with the first few finger pads of your hand, keeping the fingers flat and together. Use a circular motion, about the size of a R2 coin.”

Zen demonstrated the small circular movements and the said, “You cover the entire breast from top to bottom,

side to side. In other words you feel the whole area from your collarbone to the top of your abdomen, and from your armpit to your cleavage. To make sure that you do not miss a bit of your breast follow a pattern to be sure that you cover the whole breast. It is best to begin at the nipple, moving in larger and larger circles until you reach the outer edge of the breast. You can also move your fingers up and down vertically, in rows, as if you were mowing a lawn. This up-and-down approach seems to work best for most women. Be sure to feel all the tissue from the front to the back of your breasts. On the edge of the breast where there is just skin and tissue use light pressure. Where the swell of the breast is use medium pressure to check out the tissue under the skin. Then when you feel the tissue in the middle of your breasts; use firm pressure for the deep tissue. When you've reached the deep tissue, you should be able to feel down to your ribcage."

Prof took time to observe the girls and noted that they were all hanging onto Zen's words as they took in what she was saying.

Zen continued saying, "Please note do not press so hard that you injure your breast tissue and get bruises like the ones that Mary had. It is gentle yet with pressure that you feel right through your breasts."

Zen sat up and looking at everyone said, "Have you all got that. Use firm circular movements that cover the whole of the breast area. Any questions anybody?"

"Now we come to the last step, Step 5," Zen said when there was no comment from anyone." You now feel your breasts while you are standing or sitting. You do the same movements as in Step 4 but sitting or standing. Many women use this method to feel their breasts is when their skin is wet and slippery, so they like to do this step in the shower every time they shower. Remember in Step 5 you

cover your entire breast, using the same hand movements described in Step 4.”

Zen moved and sat on a chair and proceeded to carry out the breast examination using the same movements that she used in Step 4. On completion of the examination Zen said, “Now everyone just where you are sitting please do all 5 steps of SBE.” Turning to Prof she said, “Prof lend me your eyes to make sure that everyone is on par with what they are doing. By the by when you get to Step 4 find yourself a soft place on the floor to lie down on.”

“Zen when I was in grade 10,” Carline said, “Sister Agnes-May one of our nuns taught us to do self breast examination. Unfortunately I did not think it important. I hated the idea of touching and playing with my tits. Now for the first time I see the advantage of doing SBE.”

“Excuse me Zen,” Prof said, “I find that this is a problem with the women of our country. For some or other reason our woman think it is wrong to touch their breasts. One thing you researchers will encounter is that so often our women do not want to talk about their breasts as it is supposed to be wrong. Many women think that breasts are for men and men alone.”

“Thanks Prof. Let’s all practice SBE then I am going to call you up one by one and you are going to do the SBE in front of all of us. Let’s do it!” Zen said.

When the group broke for lunch Prof said to Zen, “Well one thing we know for certain is that the girls know SBE and can teach it, thank you love.”

“Prof I do wish that I could find a way to make all women do SBE,” Zen stated. “One day a while ago you said that about 80% of the women who get breast cancer will not die from the disease because SBE will allow the discovery of the breast cancer at an earlier stage and then it can be successfully treated.

Chapter 12

Prof sat and listened to the girls returning from lunch. It was a babble of noise full of laughter and excitement. He cast his mind back to the happenings of lunch. As they had got up to go to lunch Sarah had walked out of the room when she suddenly stopped and shrieked with laughter. Running back into the room she gasped, "Look at me I was on my way to lunch. I forgot that all I was wearing was my panties and nothing else. Just think of the sensation I would have caused if I walked into the dining room dressed like this."

"So let's cause a sensation," Carline said. "We are the only ones here in this camp site. The only people here are us and the three girls who care for the site. They look after our rooms and act as our waitresses during meal times. Prof is the only man amongst us and he has seen it all and has seen all of us."

A discussion followed that Prof stayed well away from. He quietly slipped out of the room and walked to the dining room. There he greeted that three waitresses and said that the girls would be along soon. They had set one long table for everyone to sit at and to enjoy the meals together. He took his place at the top of the table and the one waitress served him with a Coke. He was just sipping his Coke when through the door he saw the girls coming to lunch. Looking at the girls he thought surprise, surprise as he saw Carline leading the girls dressed only in their panties. He then turned and looked at the three waitresses and saw that they were all standing with their backs to the girls as they entered. Then the one girl turned around and saw the girls entering the dining room dressed in their

panties. She got such a shock that she dropped the glass that she was holding as she put her hand in front of her mouth to try and hide her shock.

The shattering glass caused the other two waitresses to turn and see what the commotion was about. Prof noted that the one waitress smiled as she looked at the panties girls whilst the other had a look of surprise on her face. Acting as if they were dresses normally the girls took their seats. The waitress who had smiled immediately picked up the tray of pre-ordered cool drinks and carried it to the table and began to serve them. Prof observed that she displayed no discomfort at serving the topless girls. The other two girls joined in but were tentative in their serving.

At the end of the meal Carline called the three waitresses to come to her. When they stood by Carline she stood up and said, "Let's see if I have got it right." Pointing to the one waitress she said, "You are Kate, your name is Lynn and yours is Emma. That's right is it not?"

All three girls nodded their heads.

"Well let me tell you about us," Carline said. "We all have just started to work in the breast cancer research unit of the local university and the man with us is our Prof, Professor Ces T. Rauts. He is a world renowned breast cancer researcher. We are spending the three days here learning all about breasts and all things pertaining to breasts. So why are we topless? Well our work is to work with breasts. To be able to do that we first of all have to accept our own breasts without shyness or a problem. Please understand that we are not into sex or sexual things all we are into is breasts. If we love our own breasts then

we will be able to help other woman accept their breast. That will mean that we can go a long way to preventing breast cancer or being able to diagnose breast cancer earlier and give the sufferer a better chance of surviving the disease. Thank you girls for accepting us as we are.”

Prof spent the time between lunch and tea discussing the various breast conditions that they were most likely to hear about. He also spoke about the treatment and spent some time on explaining that he used going braless as a method to allow breast movement that in turn helped to cure some breast conditions like breast cysts, benign lumps, and Fibroadenoma amongst others.

At tea, at which Prof found that the waitresses were more relaxed, Prof spoke about breast cancer? He emphasised the fact that no cause of breast cancer had been found. He spoke about the 4 stages of the disease. Explaining that Stage I presented itself with just a small lump that was easy to cure as the lump was excised and then the woman was checked on a regular basis for any other lumps saying that the prognosis was very good. He then talked about Stage II saying that the lump was bigger but that treatment was still fairly easy as they removed the lump and tissue around the lump making sure that they did not leave any tissue that could be cancerous behind. Again stating that the follow up was important. Prof stated that they all knew about Stage III as they had all heard about it from Melody. He explained that the cancer had spread throughout the breast. Because of that normally a mastectomy, that is a complete removal of the breast, took place followed up by chemotherapy and radiation. He also said that there was a 60% success rate with the treatment. Then he spoke about Stage IV saying that in that stage the

cancer had spread throughout the body. He explained that he did not try to treat the patient in that stage but concentrated on keeping the woman pain free and aided her to die with dignity. Prof ended off the lecture by stating that they had to remember that all the stages that he had spoken about could and did occur in men as men were just as susceptible to breast cancer as woman.

After a break Prof called everyone together and started the last lecture of the day. He started by saying that he knew what he was about to say would cause a number of raised eyebrows. Prof then spoke about the fact that bra were suspected of being one of the major causes of breast cancer. He gave as his reason that the lymphatic fluid of the body passed through the breasts on the way to join the bloodstream so that the toxic material that had been collected throughout the body all passed through the breasts. The problem was that most women wore an item of clothing that was not necessary for them to wear. Prof pointed out that bra was only part of the dress of women since 1922. He then reminded the girls that woman had had breasts forever and that before the bra there was no covering of the breasts. He also said since the wearing of the bra breast cancer had increased more than 1000 %.

Prof went on to discuss how the bra clamped the breasts and caused the lymphatic fluid to dam up in the breasts. The lymphatic fluid that was dam up in the breasts was full of toxins. These toxins then affect the breast tissue and that could and most likely did cause breast cancer.

Rayleigh immediately reacted to Prof's comments by asking, "Prof does it mean that if I do not wear a bra that I have less chance of getting breast cancer."

“I really believe that Rayleigh,” Prof replied.

“Well it sounds as if I have really done something right in my life,” Carline stated. “I hate a bra like a mouse hates a mouse trap. Whenever I have had to wear one it has felt to me as if I cannot breathe and that the whole of my chest wall is being forced into a crumpled bit of nothing that prevents me from moving. I feel so free when I go braless. I must admit that I even feel as free as a bird in the sky when I move about topless or nude.”

“Prof will we be working to try and prove the no bra theory?” Myola asked.

“Yes Myola. That is correct,” Prof said. “A lot of the research that you will be involved in will be to do with bra wearing and bralessness.”

Just after the lecture at Emma’s invitation everyone went for a swim in heated pool near the main lodge. The girls chivvied Prof to joined them but he excused himself saying that it was still too far from Christmas to swim as he only swam once a year and that is around Christmas day and then only if conditions were right. It was a time of enjoyment and relaxation. All the girls swam in their panties that they had worn throughout the afternoon and just before they got out to go for supper Carline pulled her crotchless panties off and swam in the nude. Prof was interested to note that no one made any comments about her actions.

After supper the group met at the dining room to go for a night ramble along the river bed. As Prof checked the group out he noted that they were all braless. Zen sort of

wondered over to where he was standing and said, “We have decided to spend the whole day braless that is why we are dressed as you have noticed.”

Prof reacted by reaching out and squeezing Zen’s right arm said, “Thank you love.”

Just after that they were joined by Marc an Avontur guide and after being issued with a head lamp were taken for a three hour gentle ramble along the river bank. Prof enjoyed the outing and watching the girls noted that Carline was here there and all over encouraging and helping all the girls. He was also aware that Zen was next to him the whole time. At one stage when the going was along a steep bank he found himself holding her hand as they together tried to get to the top of the bank without falling. After that their hands seemed to be connected and they walked a distance holding hands.

On return to the campsite Carline asked Marc if they could swim in the heated pool. He unlocked the swimming pool centre and then handed the key to Prof asking him to lock up after the swim and added that he will collect the key from him the following morning.

Once again Carline took charge and led all the girls into the swimming pool area. There without much persuasion she got all the girls into the pool in panties. Even though Prof was invited to join the swim he refused on the same grounds that it was still too far from Christmas. He wanted to go and leave the girls alone but Zen asked him to please stay. Her request was reinforced by Carline and Phyllis.

Just after the girls started to swim Carline climbed out of the pool and without hesitation stepped out of her crotchless panties and after dropping them onto the pool patio dived back into the water.

Just after Carline hit the water in the nude Sarah asked, “Carline what does it feel like to swim in the nude?”

“Why don’t you find out?” Carline replied. “All you have to do is to pull your panties down and throw them on the pool patio. Oh! I know that you will say that Prof will see your cunt,..... sorry see your womanhood. So what! Prof saw it the whole day today. The only difference is that your womanhood is now wet and covered by water whilst for the rest of the day your, you know what, was covered by your thin panties.” She then turned to Prof and said, “Please Prof we girls are going to skinny dip. To make it a memorable occasion for the rest of the girls please do not go. I know that you see more breasts on a day that what we have hot meals in a month and I am guessing that you see half that amount of womanhood as well. So what you will see is nothing new but it is important that we skinny dip with you around so that we know that we all accept our bodies totally and fully and that we have a holistic view of ourselves. So please don’t go.”

Prof looking at her realized that she was correct. If the girls accepted themselves totally and fully then they will be able to work with breasts without a problem. Prof nodded at Carline and said, “You know you are no fool. I do not intend to go anywhere. What you have said is so true. Today I had the honour to see all of your breasts and then throughout the day was afforded the opportunity to take note of your womanhood. Did it do anything for me? Well no. You see the total woman’s body is the field within

which I work. That is why, not that I worry what I will do, I always work with Zen at my side to tell the woman that she is safe being in my company. So if you want to skinny dip please do so. I will not see anything new that I have not seen on each of you.”

“Well you heard the man,” Carline said. She swam to the side of the pool and “Now I want all of you to listen to me. We are all in this together. How many of you thought that you would spend the day just dressed in your panties? Then how many of you even thought that you would go walking braless? Now I am challenging you all to take the final step. Please everyone get out of the pool.”

Prof noted that Zen immediately reacted and swam to the pool side and pulled herself out to stand next to Carline. After a moment’s hesitation all the girls followed her and they stood around Carline. She immediately said, “Wait a moment.” Then watched by the girls she ran to the spot where she had dropped her crotchless panties. She picked them up and with a struggle climbed back into them. Then she ran back to the girls.

She stood for a moment facing them and then said, “OK everyone we are now all going skinny dipping. On the count of three drop your panties, Turn and face Prof then dive into the pool. Are you all ready?” Without waiting for an answer she began to count saying, “One and a two and a three. Please drop your panties.”

As she made the last comment she pulled her crotchless panties off and threw them onto the pool patio saying, “Come, come, come!”

At first there was no reaction from the girls then Zen

pulled her Tango panties off and dropped it next to Carline's. Seeing Zen react caused all the other girls step out of their panties with Rayleigh being the last to react. Prof watched and took in the fact that like Carline Phyllis was smooth shaven whilst Cherie was shaved in such a manner that only a thin strip was left above her slit. The rest of the girls all had a full bush of pubic hair. In passing Prof noted that Rayleigh presented with the most pubic hair that even though it was wet showed that it was dark and thick covering a large part of her pubic area.

Carline allowed the girls to stand for a moment and then said, "Come let us go swimming," With that she dived into the pool followed by ever one except Zen.

Zen walked towards Prof and as she did so he got the impression that she was super proud of herself. Her pair of small breasts that sat high on her chest with small nipples and areola were glistening from dampness. He took in the fact that her pubic hair was dark in colour and lightly covered her pubic area. Without a word she plonked herself down next to Prof and smiled at him said. "All I wanted to have was a panties day. Well we had that and now we are having a skinny dip session. I wonder if you know what you have done for the girls. You as a man have watched the girl's parade themselves. I know that I am so proud that you have seen me nude. You have seen my breasts on a number of occasions but now you have seen me in all my glory and I am so very, very proud of that fact. Not only me but Sarah is bursting with pride. No man has ever seen her in the nude an now you have done so and in such a manner that she is so thrilled with the occasion that she will never not be proud of her body. Today for the very first time in her life she has come to place where she has

totally accepted her body with pride.”

Zen paused and looked at the girls as they played touch in the water. Then said, “Today you have united this group of girls into a single breast cancer fighting unit. Each girl will for the rest of their lives remember this day and it will affect the rest of their lives and the relationship that they have with their breasts and with the breasts of others.”

Once again Zen sat quietly next to Prof and then with a giggle said, “I do so wish that we were alone then I would kiss you.” She was silent then added, “Sorry Prof.”

“Sorry for what?” Prof asked.

“Sorry that I was so stupid to say what I wanted. I can with the kiss comment wreck our whole working relationship. Sorry Prof,” an embarrassed Zen said as she started to get up.

“Sit down!” Prof ordered.

Zen did as Prof said and looked at him with large eyes.

“Zen you have paid me a wonderful complement,” Prof said. “Now listen to me. Please lean towards me and me and present your lips to receive a kiss that is if you really want one.”

Zen sat and stared at Prof then tentatively lent forward and closed her eyes. Prof lent forward and placed his hands on each of her shoulders and lightly kissed her on the lips. He allowed the kiss to build and then pulled her towards him briefly added pressure to the kiss and then broke the

kiss.

Zen sat up straight and touched her lips with the fingers of her right hand and then softly said, "Thank you Prof. Thank you so much." With that she stood up walked to the pool, and slipped into the water and then joined the girls as they played touch.

As Prof watched her walk away he suddenly thought of what Melody had said about their relationship. He touched his lips and remembered the delicious kiss and wondered about the kiss. He was suddenly aware of the fact that he would love to go to Zen and demand another kiss. As he found himself thinking those thoughts he realized Melody's comments could be true. With force he took the thoughts and buried them in the deep recesses of his mind.

Chapter 13

The next morning Marc, the Avontur guide, arrived at breakfast to fetch the key of the heated pool from Prof whilst they were all at breakfast. Prof just happened to look up when Marc walked into the dining room. He saw Marc look at the girls and come to a complete stop and he stared. He stood for a while and Zen later said to Prof that he looked like a fish out of water with his mouth opening and closing. Prof looked at the girls and noted that not one of them seemed to be put out by Marc's appearance. He realized that the reason for Marc's shock was that all the girls were topless and only dressed in panties.

Prof noted that the girls were unconcerned with the fact that they were topless and that Marc could see their breasts. Prof watched Marc walk towards him as if he was walking in his sleep. He stopped in front of Prof but did not look at him but kept his eyes firmly on the girls. Prof was very aware of the fact that all the girls were very aware that Marc was looking at their breast but was thrilled that none of them were apparently concerned by the fact that Marc was looking at their breasts.

Prof glanced at the waitresses and noted that they were giggling as they stared at Marc and his reaction to the girls. Without a problem Prof handed Marc the heated pool's keys and he backed out of the dining room still staring at the girls. Just before Marc got to the door he caught his heel on a corner of a floor mat. As that happened he fell and landed with a flop on his sit-a-pon. Prof glanced at the girls and it appeared as if not one of them noticed that Marc had fallen and sort of crept out of the dining room. He then looked at the waitresses and saw that they were giggling like hyenas.

When Marc disappeared all the girls began to giggle

with Sarah loudly saying, "I am so proud of myself. Marc saw my breasts and you know what I don't care."

"Carline yesterday you said that it was no skin off your nose if a man got his jollies by looking at your breasts," Cherie said.

"Tell me honestly are any of you worried by what you have just done? You showed your breasts to a man?" Carline asked.

Prof was interested to note that none of the girls reacted positively to Carline's question. It seemed as if all were not worried by their action.

Emma walked up to stand next to Carline and then said, "Excuse me! Yesterday at lunch you said that all of you work in the breast cancer unit of the local university and that you are spending three days here learning all about breasts and all things pertaining to breasts. Then you said that was that the reason why you all were topless?"

"That is correct," Carline said.

"Is that why none of you were put out when Marc walked in here just now. You all went on with your breakfast as if he was not here. Then when he fell, it was because he was looking at your boobs. Did that not worry you?"

"Emma if I asked you to join us to spend the day with us in dressed only in your panties what would you say?" Carline asked.

"To be honest I do not know what I would do?" Emma said.

Carline then turned to Lynn and Kate and repeated the question as to whether they would spend the day only dressed in their panties.

Lynn said that she agreed with Emma as she did not

know if she had the guts to go around just wearing panties. Kate did not hesitate and said that she would love to spend the day topless but added that she did not know what she would do if Marc or some other man saw her titties.

Carline thanked the girls for their honesty and laughing and giggling, as they remembered Marc's reaction, they finished their breakfast.

Just before Prof got up from the table his cell rang. On answering it he heard, "Good morning Prof, Keera Scott speaking. Are you still at camp?"

"Good morning Ms. Scott. Yes we are still at camp. What's up?" Prof replied.

"Prof I want to ask you a question but please remember that a no answer is acceptable and we will not feel bad about a no but would be pleased if you gave us a yes answer. Do you understand that?" Keera Scott asked.

"Yes Ms. Scott. You are going to ask something and I can say yes or no and you say that both answers are acceptable to you. Correct," Prof asked.

"I knew that you were clever enough to put 2 and 2 together and get 5. Now on to the question. The four of us, that is Robin, Mary, Melody and I, would like to join you and your girls for the day. In other words we would like to attend the lecturers today. We realize that some of it may be out of our league but would love to be with all of you for the day. So there you have it. You have my number on your cell. Think of our request and then phone me back and just say yes and we come or no and we see you on our next

appointment with no hard feelings. I wait to hear from you. Thanks for considering our request. Bye Professor.” Keera Scott said.

“Wait, wait, Ms. Scott, wait,” Prof quickly said, “Are you there?”

“Yes Professor I am still here,” Keera Scott said.

“Ms. Scott I do not need time to consider your request. What time do you people expect to be here?” Prof asked.

Prof moved the cell away from his ear as Ms. Scott gave a yell of joy then said, “We will be with you before the 08.00 lecture. Thank you, thank you very much. Love you much a plenty.”

With a smile Prof called for attention and said, “For your information that was Ms. Keera Scott on the cell. She requested permission that Robin, Mary, Melody and herself be allowed to attend today lectures together with you all. I told her that you people did not want them here and that they must stay away.”

Prof’s comments led to an explosion of noise as the girls reacted to his words. All the girls saying that he could not keep them away and that he must immediately phone a tell them to come. Then Zen stood up and pointing a finger at Prof said, “You lie, you lie. They are coming aren’t they? You never said that we did not want them. You lie. Liar, liar your pants are on fire. ”

“Your trouble my love is that you are to cleaver for your own good. Yes, Zen, they are coming they will be here

to join us for the 08.00 lecture.”

In reaction to Prof's comment the girls clapped and expressed their joy at the news that the visitors were coming.

Prof turned to Emma and told her that for the rest of the day's teas and lunch there would be four extra attending. He asked her please to arrange for the invoice to be altered to reflect the extra mouths that were attending the day's lectures and partaking in the meals and teas.

After breakfast Zen walked next to Prof and shyly said, “Prof I would like to apologise for my behaviour yesterday afternoon. I spoke before I thought my actions through. Please forgive me.”

“I'm sorry I do not know what you are apologising for,” Prof replied.

Looking at the ground Zen softly replied, “The kiss.”

Prof stopped and took hold of Zen's right shoulder and turned her so that she faced him. He then put a finger under her chin and forced her face upwards and made her look at him. Then asked, “Zen are you truly sorry that we kissed?”

Zen just stared at Prof who after a while said, “Zen I asked a question that you must answer truthfully. Do so now!”

“No Prof! I am not sorry but I do not want the kiss to spoil the wonderful relationship that we have,” Zen

whispered.

“Zen you paid me a wonderful honour when you asked for and got the kiss,” Prof said, “Remember that if I did not want to give the kiss I would never have done so. Now here is what I think of the kiss.”

With that Prof pulled Zen into his arms and bent his head down and kissed Zen with force full on the lips. At first Zen did not react then suddenly she put her arms around Prof and hugged him to herself as she responded to the kiss. As they kissed so Prof could feel Zen’s nipples press against his T-shirt. After a moment she broke the kiss and moved out of Prof’s hug and looking at him with a broad smile said, “Thank you so much.” With that she turned and ran towards her room. Just before she turned into the room she stopped and blew a kiss towards Prof.

All the girls were seated and Prof was just going to start the lecture on breastfeeding when Robin burst into the room and ran towards Prof who opened his arms for her to run into them. Ms. Scott, Mary and Melody also walked into the room. After Robin had thoroughly kissed Prof and before anyone could say anything Robin turned and said, “Hello everyone. We are here again. Excuse me but I always greet my older lover this way.”

Robin then turned and walked to all the girls and hugged each one. Prof walked to the others and greeted Melody and Mary and Ms. Scott.

Just after he greeted Ms. Scott she asked, “Professor why is it that you always greet me by saying Ms. Scott while you greet the others as Robin, Mary, and Melody.

You know that my name is Keera. Why don't you use it?"

"Keera until now you have not given me permission to call you Keera. If you had then you would know that to those who are on first name basis call me Prof not Professor," Prof commented.

With a smile Keera responded saying, "Good day Prof. Thank you for having us for the day."

"You are most welcome Keera," Prof replied.

"Everyone please note that as of now I am Keera to you all and he is Prof," Keera loudly said.

"Prof! Tell me is this a gathering of panties girls or what?" Melody asked.

"With your permission Prof can I answer that?" Carline asked.

"Be my guest." Prof replied.

"Prof brought us all here to teach us about breasts and to help us all become breast acceptance girls. In other words he wanted to teach us breast acceptance," Carline said. "Prof had taught us that breasts are breasts and that breasts are beautiful. Then yesterday when we realized that we all decided to show how much we have accepted our breasts and decided to have a panties day. We have carried that on today. Therefore we make no apology for just wearing panties as it shows the fact that we are proud of our breasts and that we accept them."

“Well!” Keera said, “If you girls are going to just wear panties I think that I will join you to show my breasts while I still have them.” As she was speaking she loosened the buttons of her white blouse and then removed it. Her full and round breasts were immediately seen as she was not wearing a bra. She stepped out of her slip-slops and dropped her white skirt to stand in front of everyone only dressed in her high-cut panties. The panties revealing that she was shaven as smooth as a babied bum.

Keera was immediately followed by Robin who revealed her breast less chest. She also dropped her jeans to show that she was wearing a g-string with a rose situated in front of her womanhood showing her bikini cut pubic hair.

Both Mary and Melody also stripped to panties and both were wearing full panties. By coincidence both girls were wearing flesh coloured panties that revealed that they were both sporting a full bush of pubic hair.

After everyone had settled down Prof spoke to them about breastfeeding and about the bonding that breast feeding bring about between mother and child. He also explained that breast feeding had been shown to prevent breast cancer. He ended off the lecture by talking about Adult Nursing Relationship. (ANR) that is when a woman breastfeeds an adult. During this discussion Prof pointed out that it was possible to get unintended milk flow known as galactorrhea. That was caused by nipple stimulation and he pointed out that it was possible to reach normal milk production exclusively by sucking on the breast. He added that nipple stimulation of any sort was noted in reducing the incidence of breast cancer.

“Excuse me Prof,” Phyllis interrupted. “Do you mean to say that if I stimulate my nipple that my breast will begin to produce milk?”

“Correct,” Prof replied. “But remember that it is not just a little stimulation but regular stimulation on an intensive basis.”

Prof paused and then said that ANR was usually seen as part of the sexual activity between consenting adults.

During the break Keera came to Prof and asked, “Is it possible for anyone to lactate even though they are not breastfeeding or pregnant?”

Prof assured her that it was possible and Keera just nodded her head.

Prof then spoke about the fact that bras caused breast cancer and followed that up by speaking about bralessness. As he had already discussed the aspect with the girls there was not a lot of discussion following his talk except for Myola saying that she had a number of bras for sale as she had decided never ever to wear a bra again. Cherie agreed with her saying that her bra days were also over. Mary then piped up and said that she had not worn a bra for about a month and would never ever wear one again.

After a second break Prof spoke about sex and breasts. He explained that in many cultures breasts represented sex. Especially in the so called Western culture. He added that it was common during sex for the male partner to regard the breasts and nipples as the most important part

of sexual activities. Prof commented that breast or mammary intercourse was often preformed during foreplay or utilized as non-penetrative sex. That involved the stimulation of the penis by the cleavage of the breast as the male thrusts between the breasts of the woman. During the action the breasts are squeezed around the penis for additional stimulation. Many women saw this method of intercourse as safe sex as there was no mucous membrane contact between the male and the female so no sexual diseases can be transferred via this method.

In ending of the lecture Prof said that it was important that the girls understand why some females attach more than a little importance to their breasts as the breasts were where they got their sexual satisfaction.

Tea time was a time of relaxation as the girls from camp mixed with their visitors. Prof was interested to note that the girls drew the waitresses into the discussion and that they were soon sitting amongst the girls. Zen who was sitting next to Prof commented on the action of the waitresses adding that she was sure that the waitresses would also join in the panties only dress by lunch time.

Chapter 14

On returning to the lecture room Prof stated that according to the program his next lecture was to be given on breast acceptance. With a smile Prof said that as far as he could see there was no need for the lecture as all he saw when he looked around was breast acceptance. He went on to say that he had never seen a group of woman so accept themselves as they did. Pointing out that breasts to each of them were part and parcel of who they are. He then said that he had to make special mention of Robin and her situation and the fact of her acceptance. He then referred to Keera and the choice that she had to make. Then lastly he referred to Melody and her choice. As he spoke he emphasized the fact that their choices could only be made if one was in total breast acceptance as breasts were part of the total holistic body acceptance.

Prof then said that it was stand up time and that he then wanted to combine breast love and breast hate. And then start on the first part of breast fetish. That would be followed by lunch and then he would give the second part of the breast fetish discussion followed by tea and then he would end off the day by talking about breast pride. After that it was tea time and pack up time. Then the bus would be there at 17.30 to take them home.

Prof briefly spoke about breast love saying that some females loved their breast so much that they became a sexual attraction instrument to them and these girls thought nothing of flouting their breasts. Prof made it very clear that not one of those present ever flouted their breasts. Being topless and spending the day in panties was not flouting their breasts but was an indication that they

accepted and loved their breasts.

Prof pointed out that there was a lot of breast hate amongst woman. Some woman saw breasts as nothing but trouble. Some saw breasts as the ugliest thing in the world. Whilst others saw their breasts as too large or too small or too whatever. That fact led to a roaring trade in breast cosmetic surgery. Prof then mentioned that as many as 83% of the women who went for cosmetic surgery to enlarge, to reduce, to lift, to everything to their breasts were unhappy with the results.

Prof allowed the girls to stretch and then began to talk on breast fetishism saying that it was a type of sexual fetish which involves a sexual interest in female breasts. He added that the condition was also known as mastofact or breast partialism or mazophilia. Prof went on to say that the names were also used within ethnographic and feminist contexts to describe a society with a culture devoted to breasts, usually as sexual objects. He added that it was an open question as to whether America fitted within that description.

Prof pointed out that interest in breasts was not a new phenomenon but has existed since time immoral. He told that in European pre-historic societies, sculptures of female figures with pronounced of highly exaggerated breasts were common. He mentioned that a typical example is the so-called Venus of Willendorf that had ample hips and very large breasts. Prof also explained that a number of artefacts such as bowls, rock carvings, and statues have been recorded dating pre 15000 BC showed the interest of that society in breasts. Prof also said that many mythical goddesses were represented by showing

breasts. There were several cults who worshiped the suckling mother. There were also several goddesses of love that were portrayed with beautiful breasts.

With a smile Prof said, “Yes I know that I am talking about times past but today many of our actions are based on the things of the past. Like all things when people react against things they go to the exact opposite. After the period of freedom of the breast and the worship of the breast a time followed when all things breasts was considered wrong and evil. During that period as far as everyone was concerned breast did not exist and no women had breasts. Strange as it may seem it was during that time that there was a real rise in breast fetishism. Prof spoke at length about that time and how the breast of the woman was treated by being bound tightly to the chest as that the woman looked flat chested.

At that point Prof said, “Well girls that is enough before lunch. After lunch I am going to look at breast fetishism as it is going to affect your work. So let’s break for lunch.”

Zen and Prof walked together to the dining room followed by the others. As they walked into the dining room both of them came to a stop and then Zen turned to Prof and said, “I told you that this would happen. I said that before lunch that the waitresses would be topless. See I was right.”

Prof looked at Emma, Kate and Lynn they were all just wearing red bikini panties. Emma had small round breasts that sat in the middle of her chest. Her nipples were light pink in colour and she had a small areola just a bit bigger

than her nipple. Kate's breasts were big covered most of her chest. Her breasts sagged with her mushroom size dark nipples pointing downwards. Her areola was large and dark brown in colour. The areola covered at least the bottom eights of the tip of the breast. Her breast looked very soft and moved easily when Kate moved her shoulders. Lynn breasts were of a small medium size but she had inverted nipples so that the middle of her light pink areola presented with what appeared to be a hole in the middle of the areola.

Prof noted that both Emma and Kate stood proudly looking at them but that Lynn sort of tried to cover her breasts by folding her arms across her breasts. Seeing her do that Emma said something and slowly Lynn dropped her arms to her sides. As Prof took in the picture of the three panties waitresses he observed that all three of them appeared to have a full bush of pubic hair.

Prof turned so he could watch the reaction of the rest of the girls when they entered the dining room. Robin, Myola and Rayleigh were the first to enter but appeared to notice nothing. They only saw the panties only girls when Carline, who entered last, let out a shout saying, "Yes! Yes! Wonderful! You girls are great." With that she began to clap and on hearing the clapping everyone joined in.

While everyone was clapping Prof pulled Zen towards him and lightly kissed her. Seeing the look of surprise on Zen's face he said, "That is because you are so clever."

Passing them Melody said, "So nice to see you to act as you should."

During the serving of the meal Zen whispered to Prof, “I don’t think that the waitresses have ever been treated as the star of the show like the girls are treating them now. It is wonderful.”

Just as Lynn was serving Zen with coffee Zen asked her, “Lynn do your nipples always invert?”

“Sorry?” Lynn asked.

“I am sorry,” Zen said, “I asked if your nipples are always in your breast?”

“Only sometimes do one or the other sort of pop out,” Lynn said, “But it never stays long and then it goes back into the breast. My mom also has nipples like mine and she says nothing can be done about it.”

Zen turned to Prof and said, “Please Prof have a look.”

When he nodded she said, “Lynn please stand next to Prof and let him see what he can do to fix that.”

“Can it be fixed?” Lynn asked in surprise as she moved to stand next to Prof.

Prof wiped his hands on his trousers and then using her serviette wiped his hands well. He reached up and placed the right thumb and fore finger on the areola and using the same fingers on the left hand stretched and lightly pressed the areola. At first nothing happened and then suddenly the nipple seemed to pop out of the hole. Without saying anything Lynn moved her body so that Prof could also pop the other nipple. On completion of the

manoeuvre Lynn stared at her breast and smiled saying, “Now my boobs look normal. Will they always stay like this?”

“Lynn are you able to come to Prof’s office on Monday?” Zen asked.

“Yes! Why?” Lynn asked.

“Lynn if you come to the department then Prof will fix it that your nipples will always be normal and that they will not revert to going into your breast. The procedure to fix your nipples will only take about 5 minutes.”

“I would love that!” Lynn said then shyly added, “I have a problem. I do not have a medical aid so I have to know how much it will cost.”

“Lynn you come and Prof will fix your nipples and I can promise you that it will cost nothing,” Zen said.

“Nothing! Are you saying that I can get my nipples fixed so my boobs are normal and it will cost nothing,” Lynn asked. “Is that true?”

‘Oh yes!’ Prof said. As he spoke, he for the first time, realized that everyone was watching him as he dealt with Lynn.

Phyllis who was sitting next to Zen said, “Lynn when you come to the department you must try and be there by 08.00.”

“Can I come on Monday at eight,” Lynn asked.

“That will be great,” Phyllis said. “OK Prof?”

“No Problem,” Prof replied. Turning to Lynn he said, “Monday at eight we fix the nipples up.”

“See I told you that something good will come of us wearing panties,” Emma excitedly said.

Prof started the afternoon lecture by saying that he was going to talk about modern day breast fetish the type that they would most likely come into contact during their work with breasts. He pointed out that they and most of the women that they were going to come into contact with have all experienced one or more of the fetishes. He explained that some women loved one or other fetish and would go out of their way to ensure that they partook in that fetish.

He then told the following incident, “A while ago Zen brought a twenty something girl to see me. She was a real plain Jane but had a medium size well formed beautiful round breast with mushroom shape and size nipples that always stood at attention. She had noted that men loved to see breasts so she always wore a cross-over top without a bra. That was a top that cross over the breast and was tied at the back. She used to tie the top in such a manner that when she moved in a certain way the breast popped out of the top and displayed itself in all its glory. With an exclamation of horror and a shy look and the hiding of the breasts in her hands then with an apology she hurried away popping the breast back behind the top where it stayed until she next popped it out for another man to see. She loved doing that.”

Prof mentioned that if they were to ask women if they partook in breast fetish the women would react and clout them so hard that they would spend about 2 weeks looking for their head before they found it.

After giving everyone a period to rest and to stand up he stated that he was going to name a few breast fetish that they would definitely come in contact with.

“The first one that I want to talk about is breast size fetish. The favourite is huge or big breast fetish. This type of fetish creates a huge market for breast enlargement. Although there is another part of this fetish and that is some individuals have a fetishist preference for large natural breasts only without any breast implants or other method of enlarging the breasts.” Prof explained adding, “Then there is the other side of the coin. Small breast fetish. This is the focus on small to very small breasts. Fewer people are into this fetish and they find their ideal breasts quite often on skinny fashion models.”

Prof stopped and looked at everyone then continued saying, “My second breast fetish is breast fetish on nipples and areola. In this case there is a focus on long or thick nipples or in some cases on puffy areola that stand away from the breast. The Miss Wet T-shirts are the major attraction to these people who are into this breast fetish.”

“Now let’s look at number three,” Prof said, “The covered breast fetish. In this case the people who are into this fetish focus on dressed breasts rather than the topless or nude breast. These people love to see a tight or sexy T-shirt or some other top that will raise the attention of these fetishists.

Once again Prof stopped and looked around and then proceeded saying, “Number four is the cleavage breast fetish. In this case some people are more focused on the valley between the breasts, the cleavage, than on the breast itself. The more the girls breasts are pressed together to create a deeper cleavage the more attention the girl will get. I would like to point out that the so called Wonder-bra is a boom for the person into the cleavage breast fetish. The bra presses the breasts together and upwards causing a deep cleavage that thrills the cleavage breast fetish.”

Without a pause Prof said, “Now number five is the bouncing breast fetish. This is exactly as the title says. The people into this fetish go to places where girls run or go to a beach to watch girls play to see the breasts bounce up and down. This can be considered to be part of voyeurism.”

“Number six breast fetish is the lactation fetish and I do not intend to talk about that as we have already talked about that and ANR. All I would like to add that people into this fetish have derived games and methods of bring this fetish alive to them,” Prof said. “The favourite is the milking games. In this case the lactating woman milks her breast and squirts her milk into someone’s mouth or onto the male penis or onto another female’s breasts or sexual organs.”

Prof paused and then said, “Now onto the seventh breast fetish, selflicking. This usually refers to a woman licking her own nipples. Apart from being a fetish when another person, usually a man, watches a woman licking or sucking her own breast it can also be considered as a type of nipple stimulation. In the case of selflicking the woman

must have big breasts so that she is able to lift the breast up and by bending her head reach her nipples.”

Prof looked at everyone and asked, “Any questions?”

When none were forthcoming he continued saying, “Well girls the fetish that I have spoken about are considered to be the most likely that you will come in contact with. I am not going to discuss breast foreplay or breast masturbation or even provocative breast photo posing to name but a few of the breast fetishes that are out there.”

Prof paused and then said, “Now the question arises, what breast fetish do we suffer from. We work with breasts. We see, touch and do all types of things with breasts every day. Well to be honest we suffer from a work with breast to find a breast cancer cure fetish. Let me tell you I do not mind if trying to find a cure for breast cancer is considered as a fetish. Remember when people ask you where you work and they hear that you are a breast researcher then you can think of what comments will follow. Tit girl, boob watcher, tittie toucher just to name some of the more polite comments that will be made. Now at the end of this lecture can I answer any of your questions?”

“I do not have a question,” Robin said, “But I want to say that people are strange creatures. I never knew that people were so into breasts.”

“My sweetheart let me tell you I have not spoken about some things as they are too horrible to talk about,” Prof said. Then with a smile in his voice added, “I can call you

my sweetheart as you see me as your older lover.”

Giggling Robin got up out of the chair on which she was sitting and ran to Prof and put her arms around his neck and kissed him while that other girls clapped and cheered and passed comments.

Hugging Robin Prof said, “Tea time I think.”

Tea time was served by the panties waitresses with Kate proudly saying that they had spent the time since lunch only dressed in their panties. She had added that she was so proud of herself.

After tea Prof said, “We were supposed to return to discuss breast pride but that will be a waste of time because I cannot say anything more about breast pride after seeing you all here. What can a person say about breast pride when all of you here display a breast pride that cannot be beaten?”

“Prof,” Phyllis asked, “Prof the varsity bus will only come to fetch us at 17.30. That give us nearly 2 hours before the bus comes. Can we please go skinny dipping?”

To cheers and clapping everyone looked at Pros and awaited his answer.

“Well I do not see a reason why not!” Prof said adding, “But we have a minor problem we have no key to get into the pool.”

Giggling Lynn held up a key and said, “Yes we do. Here it is.”

“Now you know how we spent our time whilst you were at lecturers,” Emma shyly said.

“Well what are we waiting for?” Zen said.

“Emma are you girls going to join us,” Carline asked.

“Well we are off duty once we have cleaned up after tea,” Emma replied. “We can then join you if you would like?”

“Well if that is the case,” Rayleigh said, “Tell us what to do and we will help you clean up in no time then we can all go to the pool together.”

Prof watched as everyone got stuck in and tidied and washed up and packed away. As Zen who came and stood next to Prof said, “Talk about helping hands making quick work. Well this is a good example.”

Her words were scarcely cold when Emma said, “All finish! Thank you! Let’s go.” She then led the exit out of the dining room to the pool area.

“Along you go,” Prof said to Zen.

“You must come as well,” Zen said as she took Prof’s hand.

“Zen the waitresses have joined the group and they will not want a man to see them in all glory as they skinny dip,” Prof said.

My Melody

“Come I will go and ask them,” Zen said. “I know that they will want you there then they can, like our girls, say that they skinny dipped with a man.”

An hour and a half later Prof got everyone out of the pool and asked them to come and stand around him. He then thanked the girls for coming to camp and for being part of the whole action. He thanked Robin, Mary, Keera and Melody individually for their contribution to the camp. He added that the fact that they had joined in the panties day and the skinny dipping had shown the girls that things could be completely normal. Lastly he turned to the waitresses and thanked Emma, Kate and Lynn for accepting the girls in totality and for joining in. He then said that the girls better go and get their things ready so that when the varsity bus arrived that they were ready to leave.

“Prof,” Phyllis said, “We all would like to thank you for teaching us so much and for aiding and assisting us to understand more about our breasts. I am sure that like me everyone else has had their eyes opened with regards to breasts and we have discovered that breasts are not just breasts. I am now going to ask Robin to demonstrate how much we appreciate what you have done for all of us.”

Saying, “Oh! Yes. Oh! Yes.” Robin walked up to Prof and stood in front of him and said, “My skinny dipping body is still wet but no worries.” With that she placed her arms around Prof’s neck and standing on tip toes reached up and kissed him with force on the lips. Prof allowed the kiss to build and then broke away as he cuddles Robin in his arms. Looking at everyone Robin said, “See that is how one says thank you to your older lover.”

As everyone prepared to head for home Melody came and stood next to Prof and said, “Prof I make no apology for saying that you must hook up with Zen. She is just right for you. Her love for you is so clear just like your love for her. Please my dear Prof don’t wait and waste too much time before you take her to be your own.” She then paused and added, “One should never wait but grab love because sometimes one is not allowed a lot of time to love.”

Melody then kissed Prof on the cheek and walked away. As she did so Prof thought how his love for Mary-Louse had been cut short and looking at Zen he knew that he must not waste time. But was not sure how to proceed.

Chapter 15

Driving to work on Monday morning Prof thought back to the camp and once again considered it to have been a total success. He thought about the change in the relationship between Zen and him that had occurred as a result of the camp. Before that camp he had seen and touched Zen's breasts when she was a patient but since she had begun to work with him that had always been on a complete professional basis. That had changed at the camp when Zen, during the skinny dipping had come and sat next to him and had asked for a kiss that he was pleased to supply. He thought about Melody's comments and how she had encouraged their relationship.

He remembered that on arrival at the office after the camp that he and Zen has seen all the girls away after he told her that he would run her to her flat. The trip to the flat had been quiet and when he stopped outside of the building he had not been surprised when Zen had leaned towards him and had kissed him softly yet with meaning on the lips. After that she had got out of the car and taking her rucksack had walked into the building without looking back.

Marian and the children had been pleased to see him and the family had spent Saturday morning at the high school attended by Jon and Petra watching them play hockey. He had been very thrilled that Jon had been chosen to play in the schools first team even though he was under age to be playing in that team. The cherry on the cake had been a hat trick of goals scored by Jon. His coach had been very enthusiastic about Jon's game and had told

Prof that Jon would soon be playing for the regional team. To Prof's and Marian's surprise Petra had captained her side and had led it to a 3 – 0 victory.

The family had celebrated the wins at a local fast food place where Jon and Petra were given the honour of ordering food for everyone. As they were driving home Marian reached over and touched Prof on the arm and with a smile said, "And a good time was had by all."

"Thank you Sis," Prof said. "I do not know what I would have done if you were not here?"

"Time you took a wife," Marian said.

"What about you finding a husband?" Prof commented.

"Got a wonderful family. Don't need a man in my life. Have had one and one was enough," Marian replied adding, "A woman does not need a man if she has a family but a man needs a woman to be his help-meat."

Prof just grunted and did not comment and drove home in silence.

When he walked into the office he was immediately aware of the fact that a tinge of excitement hung in the air. Phyllis after greeting him said, "I have sent a note to the South Pole saying that Lynn is here for the correction of her inverted nipples. You will see Melody at 14.30. You have a meeting with the girls who are going to partake in the braless experiment. All your breast research assistants are all present and correct and rearing to go. Oh yes then most importantly please ask Zen to show you what present

Carline gave each of us this morning and insisted that we wear the present.”

Prof was conscious that as Phyllis mentioned Carline’s present Cherie began to giggle. Prof noted that she put her hand on her womanhood.

Wondering he walked into his office and saw that Zen was busy laying out his breast examination tray and the stitch tray. When she saw him she immediately walked towards him and reached up and kissed him saying, “Like Robin this is the way that I intend to greet you daily from now on. If you don’t like it hard lines.”

Prof immediately reached out and pulled Zen into his arms and returned her kiss and said, “That is what I think of you method of saying good morning.” When he stepped away from Zen he asked, “Phyllis said that I must ask you to show me the present that Carline gave each of the girls.”

Prof was amazed to note that Zen stood still for a while as if trying to decide what to do. Then she gave a giggle and said, “Well Prof you saw it on Thursday and on Friday so I am showing you nothing of mine that you have not seen.” She then walked to the examination couch. She loosened all the buttons of her white uniform and then lay on her back on the examination couch. She then pulled her knees up and her uniform fell open to revealing that she was braless and that even though she was wearing panties, her only piece of clothing, he could see her womanhood. Prof did not immediately register what Zen was up to and only clicked when she said, “Panties.”

Prof took another look at her panties and saw that her

womanhood was covered by a full bush of dark pubic hair. It was only after he took note of the fact that he could see her womanhood that he registered that she was wearing crotchless panties. Noting the Prof had noticed her panties Zen began to giggle and said, “Yes Prof I am wearing a pair of crotchless panties. Carline gave each of us a pair of crotchless panties this morning and asked us all to wear them. Without much of a problem we all climbed out of the panties we were wearing and pulled our new crotchless panties on.”

With that Zen sat up and began to button her uniform. She stood up and faced Prof who reached out and pulled her into his arms and after kissing her lightly said, “Thank you for loving and trusting me. I was glad to see your womanhood once again.”

Smiling Zen said, “Well let’s get Lynn’s inverted nipples sorted out. All the trays are ready for you and the examination table set up for Lynn. The Licnopaine 1% injection is ready for you. That should be sufficient to give a strong enough local anaesthetic effect to allow you to pop the nipples and then stitch them into place.

When Lynn came into the office it was clear that she was scared. Prof sat her down and spent some time talking to her about the camp and her work. By mentioning the fact that the camp of the breast unit was most likely the strangest camp that she had ever served got her to relax. Prof was interested to note that Lynn was very proud of the fact that she had been part of the panties day and that she was thrilled at the fact that she had taken part in the skinny dipping.

When Lynn was relaxed Prof explained to her that he was going to give her two tiny injections. One around each nipple. He told her that she would feel a tiny prick then nothing as the local anaesthetic would kick in. He would then pop the nipples and after making sure that they were in position would use a tiny stitch to make sure that the nipples would stay in position. He explained to Lynn that the nipple would always present standing at attention but that would not be a major problem.

In reaction to Prof's explanation as to what he was going to do Lynn said, "Professor I do not care how my nipple looks as long as I show like a normal girl with a nipple and not a nothing. When other girls have seen my tits without a nipple there are always a number of comments and I am tired of that. It is going to be wonderful to be normal."

Some 20 minutes later Prof said, "Well there it is Lynn you now have 2 breasts with nipples presenting to the world."

Lynn glanced down at her breasts and slowly reached out to touch the nipples. Seeing her uncertainty with regards to her action Prof said, "Yes you can touch them but gently. You have no after treatment except that you have to return in 8 days time so I can remove the stitches and I will check up a month later. The only thing that you may not do for the next week or so is to wear anything tight over the breasts. That means no bra. Please this is important. Lynn, you need to wear something very loose over your breasts to allow the nipples to settle into their new position."

“That will not be difficult to do,” Lynn said. “I suppose you noticed that I was not wearing a bra this morning. I do not have transport so on Friday Carline organized to bring me here this morning. When she picked me up she gave me a pair of crotchless panties which she made me put on there and then and she also said that I should come to see you braless and it would allow the breasts to hang normally and allow you to work better with them.”

“Well I am very glad to hear that you listened to good advice,” Prof stated and then went on to remind her that he had to see her twice more and asked that she makes the appointments via Phyllis.

Later that day Zen brought Melody into Prof’s office for her appointment. After greetings were exchanged Melody thanked Prof for making her part of the camp saying that two things had occurred in her life as a result of the camp. One that she was not shy to say that she had breast cancer and two that she realized that she can, by talking about her breast cancer, help others understand, all about the disease.

When she returned from the changing room and stood before Prof to allow him to examine her breasts he noticed that she was excited. When he placed her in front of the mirror and wanted to examine her breasts she to his surprise said, “Now I am so glad that I skinny dipped on Friday.” With that she dropped her green gown that she was wearing so that it slipped to the floor to land in a bundle at her feet. With a giggle she stepped away from Prof and lifted her hands above her head. He immediately took in the fact that she was wearing green crotchless panties.

Melody then said, “Wearing these panties that Carline gave me this morning when I arrived here I feel as if I am nude. I must admit that I feel good. I think that David will go gaga when he sees my panties or shall I say lack of panties.”

Prof undertook a detailed examination of Melody and discovered that both lumps were increasing in size with the left breasts lump being bigger than the right breasts one. For the first time Melody reluctantly admitted that she had pain. She said that it was a type of toothache pain. Prof immediately put her on a strong pain killer. After making sure that Melody was attending the anti-natal classes and that she was seeing Doctor Andy Terry, who was regarded as the best obstetrician that Prof knew, Prof sent her on her way saying that he would see her in a three days time.

Just after Melody left and before Zen went to fetch the next patient Prof said, “Do you know how many crotchless panties Carline bought? She seemed to have given everyone a pair.”

“All I know is that she dished them out to everyone. I think that she brought a pair for everyone who was at camp. Lynn told me that Carline had given her pairs for Emma and Kate. Phyllis also told me that Carline had given her pairs to give to Robin, Mary and Keera.”

Just before Prof was to go and address the girls who were to take part in the bra braless research program Robin came bubbling into the office. After hugging and kissing Prof she stepped away from him and kicked her slip slops off. She then stepped out of her jeans and pulled off her high-cut tango panties that she was wearing and then climbed into pink crotchless panties. After that she whipped off her T-shirt and then slowly turned around in front of Prof. With a giggle she said, “See I have got a new

nude look.”

Having said that she stepped closer to Prof and pointed to a spot on the left chest saying, “Prof I am worried. Since yesterday I have had an itchy place just here. It is driving me mad I just want to scratch it the whole time. Please make sure that it is not something left behind. I had hoped that you had got it all.”

Prof stepped closer and looking at the spot saw a tiny black spot. He asked Zen for a breast tray and from that removed a pair of forceps. Telling Robin to stand still using the forceps he seemed to pinch Robin’s chest wall. She uttered, “Ouch!” And stepped away from Prof who pointed the forceps at her saying, “Here is your itch.”

Looking at a tiny black thread like object caught in the jaws of the forceps Robin asked, “What’s that?”

“This, my sweetheart, is your itch. It is a piece of black silk stitch that was not removed when your stitches were removed. You will now find that your itch has disappeared,” Prof said.

“So it’s not cancer is it?” Robin asked in a voice that reflected her worry.

After handing the forceps to Zen Prof took Robin in his arms and hugged her saying, “No sweetheart it is not cancer. As far as we can ascertain we have removed all of the cancer from your breast area. You do not have to worry about that.”

“Wow! That is the best news I have heard,” Robin said.

A while later Robin left the office after giving her older lover a meaningful kiss.

Just after she left Zen said to Prof, “I hope with all my heart that you were right. I heard you cover your basis by saying to Robin that as far as we can ascertain we have removed all of the cancer from your breast area.”

“Well I could not have told her that the cancer may

have spread to her body before we did the operation or that the cancer may flair up in another place in her body without warning. You know Zen I love my job but at times like this I hate it. I have such a love for Robin and I would hate to have to tell her that all we have done for her has been worthless,” Prof quietly said.

“God help that that never happens.” Zen said as she reached out and touched Prof on the arm.

Just on 14.00 Prof and Zen walked into a lecture hall on the main varsity campus. They joined the 4 research assistants who were already seated in the lecture hall. Prof glanced around and saw that there were many female students seated in the hall. As Prof walked towards the research assistants Zen walked to the lectern and connected the lap top she was carrying and set it up to present a power point production.

After greeting the research assistants Prof inquired if they were ready for their first task. He reflected on the time that he had spent with them from 11.00 till 13.00 when he had discussed the bra no bra research program. He explained that he had put up notices throughout the varsity campus and had asked for girls between 18 and 23 years of age to volunteer to take part in the research project. He had invited those who were interested to report to the lecture hall and the notices had pointed out that those who took part in the research project would be paid for their participation. As he had pointed out the fact that payment was to be made would act as a draw cloth.

During the morning session he had pointed out that there were only two other research projects of this nature that had been carried out in the world, one in Japan and the other in Vietnam. The object of the research was to establish what would happen to a breast if a girl suddenly stopped wearing a bra. He pointed out that the main

contention was that the breasts would sag and hang. He stated that he was of the opinion that the breasts would lift and get firmer. He pointed out that the breasts did not have any muscles and therefore could not firm or lift by means of exercise.

Prof went on to explain that that shape of the breasts were strongly influenced by the triangle of skin that extended from the chin to fan out over the breasts. This triangle of skin is supported by the fan shaped platysma muscle. He added that the skin triangle together with its supporting fan shape platysma muscle is sometimes referred to as the 'natural bra.' By exposing her lower teeth the women contracts the platysma muscle and this will lift the breasts upwards giving a natural bra effect.

Prof had also pointed out that the Coopers ligament (a ligament found in the breasts) also contributes to breast firmness. That means that if a woman looks after the skin of her breasts with a good skin oil or cream and by doing breast tone exercises like swimming or arm swinging exercises and by eating a healthy diet the condition of the breasts can be maintained and even improved. With laughter in his voice and to giggles from the research assistants he added that skinny dipping was an excellent exercise.

Prof said that because a girl wore a bra the chest muscles which was supposed to carry the breasts did not do any work because the bra carried the breasts relieving the chest muscles of their task and function. That caused the chest muscles to get flabby. Now when the bra is removed the chest muscle suddenly find that they have to work and as they strengthen up so the muscle get tight and in so doing lift the breasts causing them to get firm and to present in a better manner.

Prof said that the research project had the potential to

prove what happened to breasts if no bra was worn.

Carline said that she had counted some 70 girls present.

Prof, using a power point production, addressed the girls present and explained what was to happen. There was a soft rumbling of noise when the girls heard that they would be expected to go braless for 6 months. He explained how they could wear a camisole or a male vest to hide the fact that they were braless. He explained that those girls who took part in the research were on their word of honour not to wear a bra under any circumstances for the 6 months. He also stated that Breast International, under whose auspices the research was to be carried out, would pay each girl who completed the six months program R3000.

At that point one girl raised her hand and when Prof pointed at her she said, "Excuse me Professor if we go braless all the boys at varsity will know that we are not wearing a bra and will have a field day."

"Thank you Miss for that comment," Prof said. "I realized that this would be somewhat of a question. I would like to introduce you all to the 5 girls that work for Breast International. They will be your supervisors throughout this research project. In our discussion this morning before this meeting I asked some of them to attend the meeting braless. Now I am going to introduce them to you and after the introduction I will ask them to walk across the room here and then ask them to walk up and down the stairs that lead to your seat and then ask them to return to their seats. After I have introduced all 5 I will then ask you to identify which girls are wearing a bra and which are braless."

Prof paused as he looked at all the girls. When there was no reaction he said, "Ladies may I introduce my team. The first one is Zen who is a qualified professional nurse.

She is my personal assistant. I do not see any woman who has any breast problem without a woman being present. Zen is the woman who is with me when I see a patient.”

Prof turned to Zen and said, “Zen please come to me.”

Zen stood up and came and stood next to Prof facing the girls.

“Please walk across the room and then walk halfway up the stairs on the right hand side, turn and walk down and then return to your seat.”

Prof then said to the girls, “I want you to observe Zen and decide if she is wearing a bra or not.”

He then said to Zen, “Go.”

After Zen had completed her walk she was followed by Carlina, Sarah, Myola and Rayleigh. Prof then called the girls to stand next to him.

Addressing the girls Prof said, “Now I am going to ask each girl to step forward and then by a show of hands you will indicate if she is wearing a bra or not.”

He then turned to Zen and said, “Zen please move forward.” He then looked at the girls and said, “You all have seen Zen walking now those who say she is wearing a bra please raise your arm.” Prof then counted the raised hands and said, “41. As we have 74 present that leaves 33 who say she is not wearing a bra. Thank you Zen.”

Prof then got the rest of the girls to step forward and got the girls to raise their hands to show if the girl were wearing a bra or if they were braless. Prof in each case loudly related the result. 68 girls indicated that Sarah was wearing a bra and 6 indicating that she was braless. Myola score was 51 indicating that she was wearing a bra and 23 that she was braless. Carlina had 63 girls saying she was wearing a bra and 11 that she was braless. 49 girls said that Rayleigh had a bra on and 25 that she was braless.

Prof asked Zen to step up again and reminded

everyone that 41said that she was wearing a bra and 33 said that she was braless. Prof then asked Zen to show the girls if she was wearing a bra or not. Without saying a word Zen pulled her T-shirt off to immediately reveal she was braless.

One by one the other girl's also revealed their braless status. With Myola showing that she was braless immediately and Carline, Sarah and Rayleigh showing that they were all wearing a camisole. It was noticeable that Sarah braless status caused the most reaction due to the fact that she had big breasts that seemed to cover the whole of her chest.

At the end of the demonstration Prof said, "Ladies there you have see how a girl can go braless and not show that she is braless. This is shown that in all cases most of you have indicated that all the girls were wearing a bra while back at the ranch they were all braless."

Prof paused and then added, "If you decide to help us with this research project then you will be given 2 camisoles to wear. As you all see the camisole shows straps over the shoulders which lets people think that you are wearing a bra." Prof stopped and then said, "Please ask your questions."

"When and how will the research be done?" a girl asked.

"We have 4 research assistants and those girls who indicate that they will be willing to aid us with the research will therefore be divided into 4 groups. Then each girl will see her research assistant some time on a Monday so that measurements can be taken. There are 7 measurements

that will taken each week. But ladies please I will stress that you will be on your honour that if you decide to help with this research that you will go braless for the next 14 week. Oh! Yes I must state that the measurements will be undertaken at the university clinic which I am sure you all know is near the main entrance to the university. Measurements will be taken from 13.00 to 17.00 on Mondays. Then as part of the research the research assistant will look you up sometime in the week to check on your bra status. This is not done because we do not trust you but as part of the requirements of the research project.”

Prof paused and then added, “Unfortunately if you are found to be wearing a bra twice during the research period that you will be excluded from the research and will forfeit any pay that you were to receive. I hope that that is very clear.”

Prof stood quietly and then asked, “More questions please.”

When no questions were forthcoming Prof spoke again saying, “Ladies on the desk in front of you, you will find a research registration form. If you are going to help us please full the form in and then bring it to one of the research assistants and hand the form to her. We will then divide you into groups and you will be allocated to a research assistant. If you are going to help us you will report to the clinic between 13.00 and 17.00 tomorrow, Tuesday. Then from next week measurements will be taken on a Monday. So ladies please full in the forms and come and hand them in and those who agree to help us the research project starts straight after tomorrow’s

measurements. I do hope and pray that all of you will join us.”

Later after the students had left Prof found that 68 female students had signed to be part of the research project. After he had tallied the students he gave Carline the job of dividing the girls into 4 groups. Later it was revealed that only 62 students started the research project. During the 14 weeks 7 students were excluded because that were found on two occasions to be wearing a bra and were therefore dropped from the research. That allowed 55 students to complete the program which proved conclusively breast do not sag if a bra is removed but that the breast firms up and sit higher on the chest wall.

Prof was thrilled with the results as they proved what he had always maintained. As he told all the girls in the department that not wearing a bra meant that those girls would have breasts that sat higher on the chest than a girl who wore a bra.

Zen was thrilled with the results and gave Prof a lovely kiss to celebrate the findings. For a long time they stood in each other's arms. As Zen stepped away she said, “We will have to watch it because one day Phyllis will come walking in and find us kissing.”

“So what! I don't care,” Prof replied and got a brilliant smile from Zen as a reply.

Chapter 16

When Prof walked into the office he was immediately swamped by everyone in the office with Zen asking, “How did it go?”

Prof looked at everyone that stood around him, Zen Carline Sarah Myola Rayleigh Cherie Phyllis and he was surprised to see Melody, Robin and Mary in the group. Speaking softly Prof said, “Keera is resting comfortable after a successful operation. She is in high care for today just to make sure that she is OK. I expect that she will make a full recovery and be home within 5 days.”

Led by Carline everyone clapped. Robin stepped up to Prof and wrapped her arms around him and softly kissed him. When she broke the kiss she said, “See that is how a person thanks her older lover when he has been real great.”

“Prof the three of us that is Robin, Mary and I spent last evening at the hospital with Keera. It was only then that I realize how close the four of us are,” Melody said. “Just think we have been drawn together by our breasts.”

“I must say that I really appreciate the fact that you spent last evening with her. Even though she was brave she was still very apprehensive. I know that she was very pleased to have you there with her. She told me this morning that you had been with her last evening and mentioned how much your support had meant to her.”

“Well we better get back to the grindstone or otherwise a certain Prof will start fuming at the mouth and that is not

My Melody

a nice sight to see,” Phyllis said to laughter. She then turned to Prof and said, “Prof your first patient is Melody followed by Robin and then Mary and then the rest of the pebbles.”

“Right Zen let’s do it,” Prof said as he walked to the examination room.

The examination of Melody breasts revealed the lump in the left breast was decidedly much larger and more painful to the touch. Answering questions about the pain Melody admitted that the pain was getting worse and that the pain tablets that she was taking only worked for a short period of time. She also admitted that she was having a problem sleeping. Prof immediately prescribed a stronger pain pill and a sleeping pill. He told Melody that when things got too much she was to take a sleeping pill and sleep the pain away.

After seeing Melody out Zen returned and walked up to Prof and standing on tip toes kissed him softly on the lips. As she stepped away she said, “That is the good morning kiss that I missed this morning.”

Smiling Prof said, “Nice to feel that it was not forgotten.” As he spoke he realized that Zen had for the past few days not only kissed him good morning but also kissed him good night as she left work at the end of the day.

Prof then examined Robin and sent her for a CT full body scan just to make sure that all was well. She also kissed her older lover when she came in and when she left.

Mary's examination revealed that her breasts were completely normal and that she was not going to bare any after effects of Blake's groping. Prof was actually surprised that Mary was unhappy when he told her that she need not see him in the future as her breasts were normal.

Realizing what was what Zen said to Mary, "Mary please do not forget about us. Please pop in on a regular basis. I am sure the Carline and the gang will be only too pleased to see you and when you pop in you must also come and see both of us. Then I have a favour to ask you please."

"Any time, what favour," Mary eagerly inquired.

"Mary, Robin will need a lot of support in the future could I please ask you to be there for her in the future," Zen asked.

"Oh yes I will look after her," Mary said with force.

"Remember when she comes to see Prof you must come along to support her. Tell her Mom that Prof has appointed you a Robin's personal looker-after," Zen added.

After a happy Mary left the office Zen turned to Prof and said, "We will have to keep Mary connected to us by some means. Here she finds stability in her life and here she feels as if she is someone. In any case it will do her and Robin no harm if they sort of look out for each other.

Prof stood up from behind the desk walked to where Zen was preparing a breast tray and stopped in front of her asking, "Since when have you become so wise?"

My Melody

Giggling Zen replied, “Since I have been receiving my daily kisses from a certain Professor.”

Taking hold of her shoulders Prof pulled her towards him saying, “In that case the Professor should give you an extra kiss to make sure that you stay wise.” He then bent forward and softly yet with meaning kissed Zen who received the kiss with joy.

Later that morning Phyllis brought Prof the post. As he glanced at it between patients he noted that there was a letter from Breast International. After completing his examinations on all the patients he picked up the Breast International letter and read it:-

BREAST INTERNATIONAL
University of Marking; Unit 23; Maxim
Professor Ces T. Rauts
Breast Cancer Unit
Nuveen University
Brooke

Dear Professor

Breast International is at present involved in a research project to examine woman’s feeling about wearing a bra.

To extend this research project I would like to enquire if you could see your way clear to use your 4 research assistants to collect data from 1000 woman who live in the rural areas of your country. Attached is the questionnaire that has to be completed.

Cecil R

I do realize that the request may cause a problem or two by clashing with your present research project but it is trusted that you will see your way clear to carry out the request.

Please note that your funding will be increased by \$20000 to cover the additional expenses. The funds to be paid in within 3 days of the receipt of the completed 1000 questionnaire.

Thanking you for considering the request.

Yours

Fat

Professor François Antoine Thompson

CEO Breast International

Without a word Prof handed the letter to Zen to read.

After reading the letter Zen looked at Prof and said, “Well we can do that but we will have to organize it well. Any thoughts?”

“I will have to think about it,” Prof said. “Off the top of my head I know that we can do it but it will have to be well planned and that is where I am going to need your input, please Zen as you come from the rural areas. Let’s sleep on it then talk about it tomorrow.”

The following morning on the way to a breast clinic Zen asked if Prof had worked out how they were going to undertake the rural research. He replied that he had a bit of an idea but he was sure that she had worked it out.

“Prof,” Zen said, “I sat last night and have an idea that I think will allow us to collect the necessary data over four days. Tuesday through to Friday with Saturday on standby if needs be. The problem with my idea is that a prelim visit will have to be undertaken before we go to collect the data.”

“Explain please, love,” Prof asked.

“Well the week before we go to collect the data we will have to spend two days in the area making arrangements and getting permission to do the research from the various villages,” Zen said.

“Somewhere along the line you lost me,” Prof said.

“Prof when we get back to the office I will try to find you again and bring you up to date with my plan,” Zen muttered with a giggle.

Later that day after returning from the breast clinic and after all the administration was completed Zen came and sat next to Prof and asked, “Prof can I now see if I can find you. Well let’s start at the beginning. As you know I grew up in the real rural area. Around my village there are eleven other villages. Because I am one of the girls from that area that has become something the people look up at me and it will do my reputation no harm if I arrive there with my Professor and ask them if you can do some research there. That will certainly do me no harm. We will visit every village in the area and get permission to return to do the research. We will first of all talk to each headman and then to the chief mama of the village. Because we can sell the research as prime research taking place throughout

the whole world I do not think that we will have any problems at all. After we have got permission from one village then the others will follow suit and we should be able to get the research done in four days that is three villages a day. Getting the permission should take us two days. I would suggest that you and I go down on the Tuesday and talk to the people on Wednesday and Thursday and then return on the Friday morning. That way we will only miss patients on Wednesday and Thursday we can see them Monday and Tuesday and Friday. Then on the research week we will see them on the Monday. Remember that we are about five hours drive away so if needs be Phyllis can call you back at a moment's notice."

Zen then paused and before Prof could say anything she continued and said, "To break it down further on the research week we will have to leave here after 17.00 on Monday and should get there at about 22.00. We will sleep in a hut in my village and then start there the next morning and do three villages each day. We will carry out the research on Tuesday, Wednesday, Thursday and Friday. While we girls collect the data you will begin to collate it. I do not foresee any problems. We will collect all the data needed. If needs be then we have the Saturday and the Sunday to catch up."

"You know what Zen you should be in charge here as you do all the work while I just tag along. Thank you so much," Prof said. "I will leave all the arrangements to you to carry out. Tell me when we are to leave and I will be ready."

"Prof you know that you are talking junk," Zen replied.

On Monday evening Prof said, "I am very glad that I do not have to drive this road every day," He made the remark as he slowly drove along a rutted pothole filled so called road on the way to Zen's village. He continued saying, "It took us about 4 hours to do the first 400km but these last 32km have taken us nearly an hour to do. What a road!"

Giggling Zen replied saying, "The present road can be compared to a tar road in relation to the old road."

"Thank the Lord that I never had to drive along it then," Prof stated then asked, "How much further?"

"Just over the crest of the next hill," Zen replied.

An hour later Zen led Prof into a thatched roof rondavel hut and indicated that he must put his rucksack down. As he did so Prof said, "Thank you my sweetheart for leading me through the welcoming ceremony with the Headman. I never knew how important and ceremonial such a ceremony is."

"Thank you for honouring our Headman as you did," Zen added. "I loved the way that you carried out my instructions as if it was second nature to you. You made a great impression on the Headman and the Mama."

Zen paused and Prof saw that she was not sure of what to say so he said, "Whatever it is spit it out Zen. It cannot be too bad. Talk to me."

"I am sorry Prof but I have to share the rondavel with you for the time that we are here," Zen said in a whisper.

"So what is the problem?" Prof asked.

“We are expected to act as if sharing the bed is completely normal,” Zen said in a voice that showed embarrassment adding, “Please Prof it was not what I wanted or organized. Prof I promise you that I did not have anything to do with the arrangements. Please do not hate me for these arrangements.”

“Zen! Shut up. The fact that the village via the Headman sees us as a couple is no skin off my back. It actually makes me proud. Just think they think that a beautiful woman like you would have time for an old man like me. Wow and again wow!” Prof said, “Let’s leave it and the subject is now off bounds. We go with the flow and as things develop so we accept them.”

With a sigh that showed that a burden had been lifted off her shoulders Zen stepped up to Prof and quickly and softly gave him a kiss and before he could react to the kiss stepped away saying, “Come let’s join the people for the evening meal and celebration.”

Prof sat next to the Headman and enjoyed the evening meal and the tribal dancing. Suddenly Prof found himself doing a double take as he observed Zen dressed in the topless tribal costume of the unmarried village maidens join the other maidens in a tribal dance. He watched with interest as he saw her comfortable in doing all the moves and partaking in the dance sequence fully and showing that she was at home carrying out the dance moves.

During this time the Headman, who spoke perfect English, leaned across to Prof and said, “I am so pleased to see that Thandiswa or Zen as you call her has not forgotten

her roots. Whenever she comes home she takes an active part in all the happenings around here. Her mother and I are so proud of her. She is the first girl of our village to achieve. It means such a lot to the young girls of the village when they see how she has progressed and what she has achieved. Then to come home with you, her Professor. It is quite an achievement. Some people are not impressed with the fact that she has a relationship with you but as I watched both of you since you arrived I am thrilled to see the bond between you. I commend you Professor for your choice of a girl. Do you know my professor at Metter University used to say when one finds a girl that you can throw your hat behind you must hold on to her. Let me tell you that Thandiswa or Zen is worth throwing your hat at her. One thing I admire about her is her absolute loyalty and admiration for you as she has made no move to become involved with any man around here even though many have tried to make contact with her. In all cases she had refused the men saying that you were all she needed. In cases like this one can only say that one is proud of one's daughter."

Prof sat in shocked silence as he listened to the Headman. He was pleased that he was able to keep his face expressionless. As he listened to the Headman talking he realized two things. The first was that Zen was the daughter of the Headman and secondly that the Headman and most likely the whole village thought that there was something between Zen and himself. Realizing that the Headman was expecting a reply he said, "Sir Zen is very important to me. We have been together for the past 5 plus years and we form a wonderful unit. Zen is a very important part of the breast cancer research unit. It is because of her input that we are able to undertake this

worldwide research. I do not know what I would do without her. She is vital to me.”

As Prof spoke he realized that what he said was true. He also knew that what he said could be interpreted in a number of ways depending on how a person wanted to see the situation. As he considered what he had heard from the Headman, Zen’s father, he found that he was not upset and realized that if he was honest with himself that he was actually pleased with the situation. With sudden insight he realized where the morning and evening kiss that he got from Zen came from.

After the evening entertainment Prof wondered off to the rondavel and found that it was lit by a candle. He entered into the rondavel and saw that someone had made up a bed from braded skins. As he looked at the skin bed he remembered that it was called a Karos. Looking at it he realized that there was only the one bed made up. As he considered that situation he thought of Zen comment earlier that day when she said that they are expected to act as if sharing the bed is completely normal. When remembering the comment he thought of his reply when he told her that they must leave it and that the subject was off bounds. He had then added that they must go with the flow and as things develop accept them.

While he was thinking he saw Zen walk slowly into the rondavel and in the candle light he saw that she was still dressed in her topless traditional dress but was very tense. Without a word he walked up to her and putting his right hand under her chin lifted it up and then bent forward and kissed her on the lips than pulled her into a hug and said, “I love the way that you are so part of your roots. I enjoyed

seeing you this evening. I was so very, very proud of you my love.”

As Prof hugged Zen towards himself he felt her snuggle in his arms and heard her say, “Prof I told you earlier that we were expected to sleep together I am so sorry. You sleep in the bed and I will sleep over here.”

“Zen listen to me and listen very carefully,” Prof said adding, “We are in a situation and I would like to propose that we make the best of it. I do not mind shearing the karos with you. I had a long talk to the Headman, your father, and he discussed our relationship saying that he was impressed that you were so loyal to me by refusing any advances from the local men.”

“Prof I’m sorry,” Zen whispered. “I did not want you to find that out. Yes the Headman and the Mama are my parents. I felt that that had nothing to do with you. Then I do not want to get mixed up with any boy from here. They are a nothing and apart from the headman have done nothing nor have they achieved anything. Please do not hate me, please.”

“Hate you Zen,” Prof said adding, “I can never hate you. You are very precious to me. Earlier today I said that we must go with the flow. This is the situation and we must accept it. So let’s have no more comments. It has been a long day today so I would propose that we check the Karos out.”

Prof stood still hugging Zen and then she slowly moved out of the hug. In a soft voice she asked, “Prof what do you sleep in?”

“Well to be honest I am not at all sure,” Pros stated adding, “At home I only wear a T-shirt and nothing else. I was going to add a pair of underpants here. What do you wear?”

“I know that you will think that it is not so but I promise you that I also only sleep in a T-shirt. I have 2 T-shirts that are my sleeping shirts. Like you I also only sleep in the T-shirt,” Zen said.

“Well let’s get to bed! we are not going to get any sleep standing here,” Prof said.

“I will go for a walk while you change,” Zen said.

“Zen I know that I have had the pleasure to see you in all your glory so seeing you will not be anything new for me. So now let me return the complement by allowing you to see me in all my glory,” Prof said. With that he stepped away from Zen and walked over to his kitbag and removed a red T-shirt from it. With the minimum of movements he stepped out of his clothes and when he was nude he turned and faced Zen and after a moment pulled the T-shirt on. As he did so he sent up a silent prayer of thankfulness that he was at rest.

Without saying a word Zen stripped off and in the nude walked towards her rucksack and burrowed in it and removed a T-shirt that she pulled on. When she faced him Prof held out his hand and when Zen walked towards him took her hand in his and led her to the Karos. Without any preliminary movements together they slipped into the Karos.

For a moment they lay without movement then Zen moved and lent on her elbow and looking at Prof said, “Prof this is a dream come true but if possible please do not take me tonight. If not possible so be it.”

Prof reached up and pulled Zen down so that she sort of lay on him and said, “Zen I promise you that we will not do it until both of us are sure that it is the right thing. Tonight is not the right place or time. So give me a lovely kiss then snuggle next to me and let’s invite the sandman to come calling.”

“Thank you Prof. Please remember no snoring please,” Zen said with a giggle.

Twenty four hours later Prof and Zen once again lay in the Karos with her lying snuggle against him. Prof spoke and said. “I am gutted. It has been such a long day. Just think that we saw six villages today. Thank you love for making the way smooth for us to return to do the research. Tomorrow we see the last six villages.”

“Prof can we please stay here for another night. We see the other villages tomorrow and we will be just as tired. It is a long way home so can we stay another night to rest before we go home,” Zen pleaded.

“What is the real reason why you want to stay Zen?” Prof asked as he took Zen in his arms.

Zen hesitated and then moved to lie close to Prof as she answered in a whisper, “I just want to spend another night sleeping with you. After this I suppose it will never again happen that I can sleep with you.”

Cecil R

Prof hugged her and said, “Well let’s get some of the sleep that you talk about.”

This is a free digital edition from www.obooko.com. If you paid for this e-book it will be an illegal, pirated copy so please advise the author and obooko. We also recommend you return to the retailer to demand an immediate refund.

Chapter 17

“What a day,” Zen said just after six as Prof drove her home. “Since we got here this morning just after ten it has been run, run, run. It started so easy. Everyone was pleased to see us when we got here this morning. We saw the first two patients and no problem then Melody came in. For the first time she really looked sick. She looked exhausted as the pain is now beginning to kick in. I felt so sorry for her. I am glad that you decided to put her on a daily injection. That should give her better control of the pain. I suppose one of these days you will have to put a permanent shunt into a vein to give the injections without having to puncture her. I liked the way that you counselled her. Then I was knocked over by her answer when you asked her why she was so mysterious excited. If you had puffed I would have been lying four bones in the light. Just imagine Melody saying that she had decided to look for a new wife for David, someone who could be a mother for her baby. When you raised your eyebrows at her comment she had giggled and had said that she knew what David liked in woman and therefore she was in an excellent position to choose a new wife for him. Then she made you and I swear on our honour that we would not tell David what she was up to. You know Prof she is teaching me so much, I love the girl.”

Zen paused and before Prof could react continued and said, “Then the shit hit the fan. When Dr. Denton phoned and asked that you come and assist him I never knew that it would be such a mess.”

“Yes that was not funny,” Prof said.

“I am so glad that you decided to take me with to aid and assist you,” Zen said. “When I saw the case I was shocked.”

“I must admit that taking you with me was one of my better ideas,” Prof said. “I have had to do some emergency work for Denton before and have found that his nurses know nothing about breasts. So when he said he had a breast emergency I thought that I would take you with then have assistance and be finished quickly. “

“Finished quickly. No ways! That did not happen,” Zen said. “I can never understand what must go through a man’s brain when he does something like that. Just imagine slashing the girl’s breasts twenty one times just because he thought that she allowed another man to fondle her breasts. He said that by doing so she would never ever allow any other man except him to fondle her breasts. Do you know Prof it took you nearly three hours to stitch the pieces of breasts back together again? Then at the end of the time when you completed the job and she woke up I was so angry when she just wanted to see the bastard who had slashed her. I could have clouted her. The stupid bitch, when she heard that the man who had slashed her was awaiting trial on a charge of grievous bodily harm, she yelled at you. Then she said that it was your fault that the bloke was in prison as all that he was doing was showing his love for her. Some bloody love, slashing her breasts!”

“My love remember that it takes all types to make the world,” Prof said.

“Then the cherry on the top of the chocolate cake was when we returned here and Phyllis said the Mrs.

Emmanuel was extremely angry that her appointment was three hours late. For the second time today I could have strangled someone when I brought her into the examination room and she went off the deep end yelling at you for making her wait for so long before you saw her. Even though you told her that you had spent the three hours trying to put together a slashed breast she was not willing to accept your explanation. I love it when you suggested that she, Mrs. Emmanuel, comes with you to see the patient and that she then ask the patient why she had not arranged for the man to slash her breasts when she did not an appointment with you. That way she would not have to wait to see you. You also said that she could explain to the girl why her appointment was more important than trying to repair her slashed breasts.”

Zen then giggled and said, “That had caused Mrs. Emmanuel to really scream and call you a stupid fool. Then you waited for her to finish blowing and softly suggested that you find out why she had waited to see you for three hours.”

“I must admit the look she gave me was one that had the ability to turn blood to water,” Prof said, “Then she looked me up and down and marched out of the examination room saying that she was not going to allow me to touch her with a barge pole as I was a useless doctor who put other patients before someone who was really sick.”

“I had to smile when without saying a word you showed me the referral letter from Doctor Joshua Putter who said that Mrs. Emmanuel was complaining of breast cramps but that he could not find the reason for the cramps,” Zen said. Changing the subject she said, “Wait

that is enough complaining. Here we are at the flats. Thank you for the past four days. Three of them have been magic and today passed as I was with you.” Zen got out and opening the back door removed her rucksack and placed it on the pavement. She then lent across the passenger seat and softly kissed Prof. Then said, “I am going to miss sleeping in your arms tonight. Thank you. Love you.” With that she kissed Prof once again and then turned and picking up her rucksack ran towards the entrance of the flats without looking back. Prof thought that she was crying as she ran away.

Prof sat for a long moment looking at the entrance of the flats where Zen had disappeared and then slowly drove away.

Monday afternoon in the department was what Phyllis said was worse than a busy train station with all the movements in the department. Zen mentioned to Prof that the research assistants were all wound up and extra excited. They left the office later than they intended too because Prof had to arrange for Melody to get treatment for pain from Doctor Antony Fallen her private doctor.

It took the university bus that carried them just over six hours to do the trip that Prof had done in five hours on the previous visit. The result being that they had only arrived in the village after 22.00. After a supper of boiled meat everyone was led to their rondavel. The four research assistants sharing a rondavel while Prof was led to a rondavel away from the research assistants. On inspection he was not surprised to note that he was to share the rondavel with Zen who told the research assistants that she was going to stay in her home. Later as she and Prof lay in

each other's arms she told Prof that she had not lied to the research assistants because the rondavel that they were sleeping in was her own rondavel.

The next morning Prof found out to his surprise that all the research assistants had some knowledge of the local dialect. It was Myola home language and Carline was fluent in the language so much so that Zen said that if she stood behind a door and spoke everyone would think that she was one of the local girls. Although Rayleigh was not fluent she was able to make herself understood while Sarah was, with a struggle, also able to make herself understood.

Zen reported to Prof that Carline had grown up with a black girl who was her nursemaid and who had taught her the language. Because of the aspect that the collection had been pre-arranged the collection of the data went well. By the evening they had reached their target of 250 completed research forms. Prof had spent the day while the girls collected the data collating the data and setting it out so that the data could be interpreted.

That evening they had all sat around the bonfire and relaxed until the village maidens appeared in their tribal topless dress and danced for the visitors.

Both the Headman and Prof, who were sitting next to each other, were surprised when Carline got up and without a problem joined in and danced with the girls not missing a beat. After the dance the Headman had summonsed Carline to appear before him and had questioned her in his language. Zen came and crouched at Prof's feet and whispered a translation of the conversation between Carline and the Headman. He had delved into her

background and had also questioned her as to how come she could dance the tribal dances with such success. Seriously Carline told the Headman that her nursemaid had taught her all things tribal. In passing she had mentioned that her nursemaid had once said that she came from a village but that she was not allowed to return to her village as she had refused to marry the man that her father had ordered her to marry and because of that had been ordered out of the village. The Headman then inquired as to the name of the woman and when Carline said that her name was Ntombi Mgungqu there was an immediate reaction from everyone who heard her name. The Headman then demanded if Carline knew where she lived.

In reaction to the Headman's question as to where Ntombi Mgungqu lived Carline had refused to answer unless she knew the reason as to why they required her address. For a long time there was absolute silence and as Prof later told Zen the only thing that could be heard was the crackling of the bonfire. Then after what seemed to be an eternity the Headman replied to Carline saying that Ntombi Mgungqu was his sister and that her father had banished her from the village due to the fact that she refused to marry the man he had chosen for her. He went on to say since his father had been late for 2 years that he had searched all over for his sister but this was the first time that they had heard that she was still alive. He added that he wanted to let her know that she was very welcome to return to the village as he had lifted her banishment.

Carline had sat in silence for a while after the Headman spoke and then she had taken her cell phone and dialled a number. Via Zen's translation Prof was able to follow the events that followed. First of all Carline had

greeted Ntombi Mgunqu who had answered the phone and then she had spoken to her telling her where she was and why she was there. She then said that she wanted Ntombi Mgunqu to talk to someone. With that she had handed the cell phone to the headman and told him to talk to his sister. The Headman had taken the cell phone and walked away into the darkness to talk.

Later the Headman returned and solemnly handed her cell to Carline saying thank you without saying anything else.

Once again Prof and Zen slept in each other's arms much to Zen's joy.

The next two days were days of hard work collecting the data. Prof found that by the evening of the third day that there were less than 200 data sheets to complete to collect the 1000 data sheets. After supper Carline and all the research assistants had come and sat with Prof. Realizing that something was in the wind he had asked what was up. Acting as spokesman Carline had asked Prof that even though they would complete the research project just after lunch the following day that they still stay overnight to return on Saturday morning as they had planned. Carline had not given any reason for her request but had just said that it was important for the research assistants that they stay for another night. When Prof had agreed to her request Carline had for the first time touched Prof lightly on the arm and said, "Thank you very, very much my Prof."

When Prof and the research assistants arrived back at the village the next afternoon just after three they found a

tremendous amount of activity happening. When he asked Zen what was going on she replied that she did not know but it seemed as if there was to be a party. But the whys and the wherefores she did not know. At her suggestion she and Prof retired to the rondavel where without waiting Zen led Prof to the Karos where they lay in each other's arms without speaking. Prof felt her contentment as she lay tightly against him. He turned to her and asked, "Sweetheart what would you do if Carline or one of the other girls walked in here and found us lying like this?"

Zen thought for a moment and then replied saying, "Prof I would be upset if they walked in and found us like this. I would so much prefer that if they walked in and found that we were not fully dressed but that we were both nude. Then they would have something to react too." Zen paused and then softly said, "In actual fact I would be pleased if they found us together then we would be free to be ourselves without pretending that the moon is blue."

As Prof listened to her he found himself agreeing with her. If the department knew about them then it would be OK to react to each other. Without thinking he hugged her tighter to himself.

Somewhere along the line he dozed off and was awoken by a kiss from Zen. Seeing him open his eyes she kissed him with meaning and then broke the kiss saying, "My love it is time to get up. The party will be starting soon and I have to go and put on my traditional dress. I love wearing it because then you can see my breasts. With that she gave him another kiss and then ran out of the rondavel.

A while later Prof followed her and walked towards the

centre point of the meeting grounds. Seeing him the Headman motioned him to come and sit with him. Once Prof had taken his seat the Headman turned to him and said, “Prof tonight came about because you came to us with our daughter. She was so insistent that we meet you as she said that you were the best thing that had happened in her life. Much against some of our elders wishes we allowed her to bring you that first time and when we all saw the relationship between the two of you we knew that we had done right. Then you returned with a group of girls who each showed their respect for our culture and fitting in with our young girls. It has been magic to see. Then Carlene led me to find my sister who we thought was dead but who is alive and very well teaching young girls to love our culture. Then three nights ago I was able to talk to her and as a result we have a welcoming home party tonight for my sister whose banishment is now officially lifted.”

Suddenly the conversation was interrupted by a loud shouting strongly built young man dressed in a warriors costume carrying a shield, a knobkerrie and a spear walked to stand in front of the Headman. There he stood shouting and rattling his knobkerrie and spear as he shouted words. Prof so wished that he knew what was being said when suddenly Zen arrived to crouch at his feet. Prof noted that she was dressed in her topless traditional dress and that her face and upper body was covered with white skin adornments displaying tribal markings. In a whisper she told Prof that the man was the praise singer who was singing the praises of the Headman saying that was a wonderful leader and a very wise man. He also was a leader of his people leading them to live in harmony with one another. The Praise singer then spoke about the banishment of a young tribal girl who would not marry the

one chosen for her and as a result had been banished out of the tribe. He then said that the Headman was so great that he had reversed the banishment and organized the party to welcome the girl, his long lost sister back into the village.

As the praise singer stated the last words the women of the village began to ululate sing a song of welcome. At that a woman dressed in the tribal dress of a married woman, followed by 2 girls of about 12 and 10 and a man of colour walked into the centre circle. Seeing her, the praise singer loudly rattled his shield and spear and swung his knobkerrie. Yelling that the lost one and her family had come home.

Showing her pride the woman walked to stand in front of the Headman and bowed her head at him. The Headman then stood up and made a speech in which he welcomed her and her family to the village and stated that she was free to return to the village as often as she wished. He then welcomed her husband saying that she had chosen a good man as a partner and that the union had produced 2 beautiful children named Nosisa and Yola. Zen whispered that Jessie Gurdon, Ntombi Mgungqu husband was a chartered accountant who owned a very successful business.

After the speech by the Headman the various dancers began. First of all the village maidens danced and then the young warriors danced. Then as Prof was later to tell the Headman and Zen he was dumbstruck. At first there was nothing on the dance area then two young girls walked onto the dance area and walked to opposite ends and after standing still for a moment began to beat a rhythm out on the drums. The beating was slow and rhythmic then slowly

began to pick up rhythm and strength. Suddenly a single dancer dressed in the young girls tribal topless dancers dress danced her way onto the dance area. At first Prof did not take in the fact that the dancer was Carline but soon recognised her. After a period of solo dancing she was joined by 4 other girls. Prof found himself staring at the dancing girls as he realized that they were Zen, Sarah, Myola, and Rayleigh. They were all dressed in the traditional topless village maiden dancing costume. At first the villages seemed to be dumbstruck by the fact that the visitors from other cultures were dancing their dance steps. After a period of dancing by the group a group of young village maidens joined them in the dancing. At the end of the dance demonstration the villages went wild with joy at the honour that the visitors had paid them. Speaking to Prof the Headman said, "You have paid us a wonderful honour Professor. You and your girls will be made honourable villages of this village and will be welcome to come home at any time."

Just after that the Headman stood up and called for silence he then called Carline, Sarah, Myola, and Rayleigh to come and stand in front of him. He then asked Professor to join the girls. He addressed Professor and the girls, as he began to talk Zen appeared at Prof's side and translated for him what the Headman was saying, "We have been honoured by the Professor and his girls. Not only has he taken one of our village girls to be his own girl but his assistants have displayed their love for our village by learning our maidens dance and then they have without a problem moved away from their culture and took our culture and dress and dressed as our dancing maidens, showing that they were not ashamed to be seen as one of our maidens. It is therefore with pleasure that I hereby

make the following girls as honorary members of our village. Carline who shall be known as Bonggi, Sarah who shall be known as Sesethu, Myola who shall be known as Vivi, and Rayleigh who shall be known as Xanthe. Then we shall know the Professor as Indoda Makula. I have spoken and henceforth these villages will be welcome to return to their village at any time and reside amongst us. I would also like to announce that Thandiswa also known as Zen is hereby handed over to Indoda Makula to be his woman of the village whenever he needs her here in the village or at the place where they work and live together.

As the Headman made the statement Zen sunk on her haunches in front of Prof. He stood looking down at her wondering what was expected of him. He then heard Carline whisper, “Prof reach out and pull Zen upright to signify that she is your girl.”

Without hesitation on hearing Carline’s comment Prof reached out and pulled Zen upright and into his arms. His action was greeted by ululate, the praise singing by the village women, followed by loud shrill shouts made by all the woman as they signified that they approved of Professor taking the daughter of the Headman to be his woman. His action immediately signified the start of the dance display of the warriors as they strutted their stuff to the beating of the ox hide drums.

Much later that evening Prof or Indoda Makula as he was to be known locally slowly made his way back to his rondavel. He had just started to undress to slip into bed when Zen followed by all the other girls came into the rondavel. Prof noted that they were all in the traditional topless dress of the village maidens dress. They

immediately sunk on their haunches and looked up at him not moving. Then Carline said, “We the daughters of the village greet you Indoda Makula. May your life extend forever and may your blessing rest upon us at all times!”

Prof stared at the girls and then replied saying, “Your greeting are accepted with thanks and it is my first wish that you all remain faithful maidens. Then my second wish is that you will all revert to being members of the Breast cancer unit so I can speak normally.”

Silence followed Prof’s wish. Then Carline stood up and loudly said, “OK girls you heard the Prof let’s celebrate.” At that the girls jumped up and surrounded Prof each talking a thousand to a dozen.

Suddenly Prof clapped his hand and loudly said, “Enough. I have only got one pair of ears. So let’s go one at a time. Sarah you first.”

“Prof I am so proud of myself,” Sarah said, “Excuse Prof but I am going to say it as I feel. Tonight I ran around and danced with my titties flapping all over the place so that everyone could see them and know that I have beautiful titties. Thank you Prof for making me free.”

“Pleasure Sarah,” Prof said as he pointed to Rayleigh.

With a giggle Rayleigh said, “Prof today I became Xanthe a village maiden and I walked around topless so that everyone could see my beautiful breasts. I am so, so proud. I am sure that my family will have a cadenza when they find out that I am officially a village maiden as if I care. To you Prof my grateful thanks for liberating me and

for teaching me that breasts are beautiful. I most likely am going to be ugly when I say I so enjoyed the feeling of my boobs flapping against my chest as I danced keeping time to the drum beat. It felt to me as if they had developed their own rhythm and kept time to the drum beat.

“You are so right Rayleigh. It was beautiful to see all of you dancing,” Prof said adding, “You sure blew the villages away with your dancing. As you all know the Headman was in rapture because of the honour that you all paid his village. Thank you Rayleigh for your comments.”

“Talk to us Myola,” Prof asked.

“Prof I am sure that my breasts grew to twice their size when I went to dance with the other girls. I could not believe that a White, and a Coloured and an Indian girl would even consider putting on the topless traditional maidens dance regalia. But they became village maidens. I do not come from here but would so have loved to have them dance before my elders. To me tonight was the highlight of my life.”

“Thank you Myola. What you say is so true this night will stay with us forever and ever. Now I think it is time to hear from the heroin of tonight, Carline,” Prof said.

“I do not have words to say how I feel,” Carline stated. “I am so pleased that I was the instrument that brought Ntombi Mgungqu and her brother, the Headman, together and united them. Ntombi looked after me from the day I was born up to this very moment. She is to me more of a mother than my real mother. I am so proud that I could repay her for looking after me for all these years.”

Carline hesitated and then added, “Do you know Prof when I first proposed that we use this method to say thank you not one of the girls giped. From the first practice they threw their whole heart into getting it right. Then Prof not one panicked at having to be topless. They all took it in their stride with pride. I am so proud to be part of this group.” Once again Carline stopped and then said, “Prof to me the highlight tonight was becoming a village maiden but that paled into insignificance when the Headman announce that Thandiswa also known as Zen was presented to you to be your woman of the village whether ever you needs her here in the village or at the place where you work and live together. You two are so perfect together and it made my life filled with joy that you two may now be together without a problem. I would like to propose that you invite Thandiswa to spend the night with you. Ah! But you say what if things happen. Well my Prof remember that this is the village where you are the Indoda Makula and Thandiswa is a simple village maiden bound to you by command of the Headman of the village. Therefore if things happen then both of you should enjoy it because it is meant that it should happen. Then the village will explode with joy as they know that you two are bound by the bonds of the village. Wait enough from me.”

“Carline I do not know how to respond to your comments so all I will say is thank you for being you.” Prof said.

“Come girls let’s leave Indoda Makula and Thandiswa together so they may experience what fate has for them,” Carline said. With that she sunk on to her haunches and bowed towards Indoda Makula. Seeing her action the other

girls followed her example and then she led all the girls out of the Rondavel leaving Indoda Makula and Thandiswa alone together.

For a while Prof stood staring at Zen and she opened his arms in invitation. Without hesitation Zen ran into his arms and turned her face up to receive the kisses that Prof showered on her. After a while she pushed herself away from Prof and said, "Wait Prof I must go and remove the white skin adornments that I put on my breasts and body before I took part in the maidens dance."

"No Zen the removal of the white skin adornments that you put on your breasts and body gets removed here by me," Prof said. "Go and get water and a cloth and anything else you need to remove the skin adornments. After that return here and let me remove the white skin adornments."

Zen stared at Prof and then nodded her head she turned and left the rondavel.

Some 45 minutes later Prof stepped back from a nude Zen and said, "No more white skin adornments to be seen. You now are as clean as a babies bum. It is now time for you to slip into the Karos."

"Prof I intend to get into the Karos as I am now dressed," Zen said as she walked to the Karos and sank onto her knees and pulled the Karos up to only cover her legs below the knees. She lay on her back looking at Prof and slowly opened her legs wide presenting her womanhood towards him.

"What a beautiful view," Prof said as he stripped out of

his clothes. As he did so he knew that he was showing Zen that he was ready for her.

Much, much later Zen lay on top of Prof who was lying on his back. Both were covered in a fine layer of perspiration. Prof could feel Zen hardened nipples pressing against his chest as she kissed him time and time again. With a smile in his voice he said, “My love you will have to wait quite a while before Winkie will be able to come to attention again. At this moment he is all f out. He had been on a ride something like he has never had before. By the by I love the name that you have given my manhood, Winkie. It is so nice a name and when Winkie reacts with you then he loves it.

“Prof you will never ever know what having you inside me means to me. Ever since I have worked with you I have been dreaming of this day. I never knew that it would ever come true. I thought that one day I would die never ever having achieved my dream of having you deep inside me. Then bang it happens and I cannot tell you how much it means to me. Please Prof I promise you that I will not hound you but at any time Winkie needs to do some work please note that Fanny will only be too glad to entertain Winkie. Now my love one, my village elder, my Prof I am going to talk to Winkie and invite him to visit Fanny and then we will have a bit of a sleep. Note I said a bit of a sleep.”

Chapter 18

Prof sat in his office with his mind in a turmoil. He thought back to the past night. Zen had been right when she had said that they would get a bit of sleep. To Prof it seemed as if all Winkie wanted to do was to visit Fanny. As a result they had been late in waking and had only surfaced when Carline came into the rondavel to call them and found them lying in each other's arms in the nude. Without any problem she had woken them saying that they had to come as they were late for breakfast.

As Prof and Zen got dressed Zen commented that because they were late in leaving the rondavel that the whole village would know what they were up too. With pride she said that she did not mind as she was glad that everyone would know that Indoda Makula had deemed Thandiswa to be worthy of his attention and love.

With a shrug Prof reminded Zen of a comment that she had made the previous afternoon when he had asked what she would do if Carline or one of the other girls walked in here and found them lying together. He stated that she had commented that she would be upset if they were found lying together fully dressed. She had gone on to say that she would so much have prefer that if they walked in and found them not fully dressed but that they were both nude. Then they would have something to react too. Prof reminded Zen that she had ended the comment off by saying that if that happened then they would not have to pretend that the moon is blue.

When Prof and Zen approached the village centre he was walking about three paces in front of Zen. She had

instructed him to do so saying that it was the correct method of a man of his statue to walk ahead of the woman in his life. When they arrive at and appeared before the Headman the air was suddenly filled with loud excited comments from the villages followed by ululate, the praise singing by the village women.

Once again Prof wished that he knew what was being said but looking at his girls, who were sitting together between the village maidens, saw that they were convulsed with laughter and knew that the comments were censored.

As Prof approached the Headman he saw that he was smiling and nodded at Prof. When Prof came to a stop in front of the Headman speaking English said, "It is with great joy that we take note of the fact that Indoda Makula had deemed Thandiswa to be worthy of his attention and love. Therefore our blessings are placed upon both of you as you return to your world in the knowledge that your home is here amongst the people of the village."

As Prof sat he cast his mind back to his meeting with Mary-Louse. He had been a first year medical student and had gone to a party with some of his classmates. Just after they arrived at the party one of his classmates had introduced him to a wonderful lively beautiful sexy girl with long black hair that was platted in a single long plat. As he greeted her he took her hand and found once that he had taken her hand he did not want to leave it. Before half hour had passed they had slipped away and had found a bathroom where after locking the door he had lost his virginity. After that they had become an inseparable pair and were married within 6 months when Mary-Louse had found that she was pregnant. They had had fourteen years

of wonderful marriage that had produced six children, Jon; Petra; Margie; the twins Aniline and Anilies; and Zane until the bus accident had taken her away more than two years previously. As Prof sat remembering he thought that Zen was the first woman that he had been with in the two years since Mary-Louse had passed on. Up until that point he had not been interested in any woman. He wondered at his relationship with Zen. Was she just a sex partner or was she something more. As he considered that question he found that without hesitation he knew that she was more, much more and knew that if he was honest with himself he would admit that he was in love with her.

During the bus trip home the girls had spoken about the days spent at the village with excitement and joy. Prof and Zen had sat next to each other but the girls had not made a comment about their relationship apparently accepting it as par for the course.

Prof had been surprised when, after thanking the girls for their work each, the girls following Carline example had kissed him on the cheek as they went their way home. Carline was the last to leave and before she left she had hugged Zen and Prof heard her say, "Congrats on catching our Prof. It is more than wonderful. May you two be very, very happy and enjoy your connection."

Prof had spent time sending the collated results to Breast International and was thankful that he had undertaken the collating as the results had become available. Having no benchmark to compare the collated bra wearing data Prof did not know if the collected data would be of any help. As he said to Zen they had done as Fat had asked and it was now over to them. Later Fat was

to send a letter exclaiming how much the collected data meant to the project. He also stated that their research funding was to be increased \$20000 and by funding for two more research assistants and that his whole project would be extended to a period of 10 years when it would come up for review and extension. When Zen read that she said that Prof must not appoint the 2 new research assistants immediately as Robin and Mary were to complete school within 3 months and then they can be appointed as the new research assistants as they would fit in with the present research assistants and she knew that both of them would jump at the opportunity to be working with breasts.

Prof had driven Zen to her flat and when he dropped her off she had lent towards him and had kissed him with meaning and had said, “Prof all I can say is thank you and I love you.” With that she had ran to the building without looking back. As she did that Prof knew that she was crying.

Instead of driving home Prof felt that he would like to be alone so he had driven to the department and had gone and sat in his office.

Suddenly the ringing of his cell phone broke his thoughts and glancing at the face saw that the call was from David. He immediately answered the call saying, “David, Prof speaking. What’s up?”

“Prof sorry to bother you. Are you back in town?”

“David I am in the office. Talk to me. You did not phone to discuss the weather,” Prof said.

“Prof I am worried about Melody. She is in tremendous pain and looks bad and is very weak. Please could you see her? I am sorry to worry you,” David asked with the desperation showing in his voice.

“David I will be there in about 15 minutes. Thank you for calling me,” Prof said as he closed the cell phone. Without really thinking about it he immediately called Zen. When she answered he said, “I will pick you up in 10 minutes. Melody has taken a turn for the worse and David is worried. I am putting things together and will pick you up. I sort of know where they live but if we get lost then we can phone David for direction.”

“Prof I know where they live. I drove her car home after she had been to see you the second time. See you in 10 minutes,” Zen said.

Prof picked Zen up and after receiving and giving delicious kisses followed her directions to Melody’s home. There a thankful David met them and led them into the bedroom where Melody lay. Prof was immediately aware of the fact that Melody was very ill. Prof with Zen assistance immediately began to examine Melody and discovered that she had developed inflammation in the one breast which caused a temperature and pain. Prof wanted to move Melody to hospital but she resisted saying that she did not want to go to hospital because she did not want to die in hospital but wanted to die at home in her own bed. Prof agreed to her request and promised her that as far as possible he would treat her at home and only if it was impossible for her to be treated at home that he would move her to hospital.

My Melody

After a while Melody began to react to the treatment and began to feel better. Prof sent Zen to call David to tell him that he could come to Melody. Prof and Zen stood to one side while David sat with Melody.

Prof heard Melody ask David to please call Ann as she wanted to talk to her. David immediately left the room and a then returned bringing a girl into the room. She walked up to Melody's bed and stood facing her. Prof noted that she was built like Melody. He was interested to observe that her breasts were as large as Melody's. As Prof watched he heard Melody ask the girl if she would have a look what was needed in the house and get David to take her to the supermarket while Prof and Zen were with her. Melody then asked Prof and Zen to come closer and introduced then to the woman saying that she was Ann who taught English at a high school. She added that Ann was helping David look after her.

After exchanging greetings Ann left with David to go shopping. As she walked out of the room Zen turned to Melody and asked, "Is she the one that you have chosen?"

In reply Melody nodded and smiled and said, "Please remember your promise. No telling please."

"She is just like you!" Zen said. "But we promise that not a word will pass our lips with regards to your plan. I think that you are wonderful."

Prof did not say a word but just touched Melody on her shoulder.

Sometime later Prof and Zen left after Melody had promised that if she needed them that she would contact them immediately. Prof had added that he would call again later and then twice daily from then on.

Driving away from Melody Prof found himself in a quandary. He did not want to take Zen to her flat and he did not want to return to the office. He realized that he had not been home since they had returned that morning from the village and that it was not yet midday. Suddenly he made the decision to take Zen home with him and to introduce her to his sister Marian and the children.

Turning to Zen he said, “My love I do not want to take you back to your flat now. Would you mind if I took you home to meet my sister, Marian and the children.”

Without hesitation Zen replied saying, “Prof that will be wonderful. Thank you for asking me.”

Nearing the house Prof suddenly said, “Zen please remember that from now on I am not Prof to you but Ces. So please call me that at home.”

“Thank you Ces,” Zen said. “That will not be hard to do as you have been called Ces in my mind for months. You will never know how much I have had to concentrate not to call you Ces but Prof at work. Thank you Ces.”

Ces led Zen into the house and placed his rucksack down at the doorway to a bedroom. Taking Zen’s hand he led her to the kitchen where he introduced her to his sister Marian. She welcomed Zen with enthusiasm saying that she was glad to meet her as Ces had often spoken about her and how she helped him. She then sent her with Ces and

Zen to the pool saying that all the children were at the pool. As they walked towards the pool Ces took hold of Zen's hand and hand in hand they approached the pool.

At first it appeared as if no child had noticed that they were approaching then Margie saw them and let out a loud yell saying, "Hay! Dad is home. Dad is home." At that everyone stopped what they were doing and then there was a mad scramble as the children climbed out of the poll and began to run towards Ces.

Then it suddenly appeared as if the children noticed Zen for the first time. That caused a bit of a hesitation but Zen noticed that the youngest boy kept on running into Ces's arms. Zen watched as Ces greeted each child with a hug and a kiss. As she watched she knew that she was seeing a family that was very attached to each other. Then the one girl turned to Ces and asked, "Dad who is this?"

In reaction Ces took Zen's hand and said, "Everyone this is Zen. Please Zen I would like to introduce you to my wonderful children." Ces then pointed to each child and introduced her to Jon, Petra, Margie, Aniline and or Anilies and Zane. Each child bobbed their head at Zen.

After the introductions Jon asked, "Dad can we continue swimming? Please sit and watch us."

"Our dad never swims," The one twin said.

"He always says that he only swims at Christmas time but you know what Zen Christmas never comes for our father and swimming," The second twin added.

With that the children turned away and plunged into

the pool all except Petra who walked up Zen and asked, “Zen would you please swim with us?”

“I would like too but I did not bring a bathing costume with me,” Zen replied.

“I can arrange for you to get one that will fit you,” Petra said.

Zen immediately stepped towards Petra and turning to Ces said, “Ces I am going swimming with the children. I know that it is too far from Christmas for you to go swimming so please excuse me.” With that she followed Petra who led her into the house.

A while later Zen and Petra reappeared with Zen wearing a red bikini that sat well on her body. Ces immediately recognised the bikini as being one that Mary-Louse use to often wear. Marian appeared following them and she walked up to Ces and said, “That was the only costume that I could find that fitted her. She is a real gem. A person can throw your hat behind her.” She turned and watched Zen amongst the children. She had joined them in a ball game and her voice mixed with the shouts and laughter of the children.

“She fits in as if she is supposed to be here,” Marian stated adding, “Ces give them 5 minutes then call them to lunch. I will have it ready for them.” Marian said as she walked into the house.

An hour later, after lunch, Ces looked at Zen sitting amongst the children as they relaxed after lunch as Marian had told them they were not to go swimming until lunch

had been digested or they would suffer from a very bad tummy ache.

During a quiet period Margie suddenly asked, “Zen are you going to marry Dad?”

Petra immediately reacted to the question by saying, “Margie you cannot ask that question. Dad will tell us when he is going to marry Zen.”

“Dad,” Zane asked, “You marry Mommy Zen please.”

Ces did not react to any of the comments of the children and just looked at them. He noted that Zen’s eyes were sparkling as she tried to suppress the laughter that threatened to bubble to the fore at any moment. He was aware of the fact that she was having a wonderful time.

“For months you have mentioned Zen every now again but only in connection with the office,” Marian said as she came and sat down next to Ces. “Via that route I got some idea who she was but then without warning you suddenly bring this magical creature home. She arrives here without warning and slots in with the children as if she has always been part of them. Do you know Ces she even got Aniline and Anilies to admit who is who and since then has not made a mistake in getting their names right even though they have tried to catch her. Look at her now in discussion with Jon and Petra. I would love to know what is being said there. By the look on their faces it must be something important and I would guess something about the opposite sex.”

“It was only on a whim that I brought her home,” Ces

said. “Just after we got back from the village I was called to Melody who is not at all well. As per my own rule never to see a patient without a woman present I phoned her and told her that I would pick her up. No problem. We found Melody in a bad way and spent time fixing her up. I will be going back to see her when we leave here later. I will be going to visit Melody from now on every day and most likely twice a day.”

Later when the swimmers were having time out Ces saw Marian sitting on the patio next to Zen who had Zane sitting on her lap. The two women were talking and Ces was interested to note that every now and again that they would both giggle. Looking at them he suddenly remembered that both the Headman and Marian had said that he would do well to throw his hat behind her. As he thought about that expression he wondered where to next.

During this time Jon and Petra came and sat with him. At first they sat in silence then Petra said, “Dad it is so good to finally meet Zen. You have so often spoken about her and said how much she helps you at work. She is a wonderful person. Dad you can bring her home at any time. I promise you that she will always be more than welcome here. All of us children love her. It will be magic to have her as part of our family.”

“Dad what Petra says is very true,” Jon said and added, “Dad if you want to move her in we would welcome her. We do miss Mom but you need someone who can share us with you. Aunty Marian is here but she is not yours, she is your sister. She and Zen will get on so well. If you move Zen in then you will find that Aunty Marian and Zen will click and we kids will be in seventh heaven having two mother

figures looking after us. One thing you need never be afraid of is that we can play Zen against Aunty Marian. That will create a problem for us as those two are like the twins their brains are set in to each other.”

“Since when have you two become so wise?” Ces asked.

“Ever since you have brought Zen home,” Petra replied with a soft giggle.

Ces was surprised at the unhappiness of the children when he got ready to take Zen home via Melody. They all wanted her to stay longer. Ces explained that they had a very sick patient that they had to go and see and it was with reluctance that the children let them leave. Ces noted that Zen went to each child and hugged the child and then kissed the child on the lips. She included Marian in her goodbye hug and kiss.

As Zen prepared to leave she turned and addressed the children saying, “Listen tribe I will see all of you soon. Until then please help Aunty Marian and look after each other. Goodbye for now, tribe.”

As she walked towards the door the children all shouted their goodbyes.

Ces stood rooted to the spot when he heard Petra softly say, “Goodbye Mother-to-be please make Dad bring you back very soon.”

Ces drove the trip to Melody in silence as he did not know what to say. Zen had placed her hand on his leg just after they drove away and was also silence.

On arrival at Melody's they found that she was feeling much better. Prof was not surprised to find that Robin, Mary and Keera were visiting her. Prof found that the visitors were able to assist Melody and allow her to be at ease. On seeing him Robin had as usual ran and hugged and kissed her older lover.

Still without talking Ces drove Zen to her flat. Outside they sat in the car for a while still not talking but with Zen's hand on his leg. Suddenly without thinking Ces found words bubbling out of his mouth as he said, "Zen I have had the most wonderful past few days. Last night we connected and I went to a place that I did not know existed. Then today you came to my home and conquered my children. My sister Marian was overwhelmed by you. You fitted in as if you were always there. My sweetheart where do we go from here. I am sure you know what I feel for you. Please note my darling I am placing you on notice that I am going to keep you for myself and to do so I am asking you now to please marry me."

Ces immediately felt the electricity in the atmosphere as he felt that his proposal had caught Zen by total surprise. He also felt a build up of tension in himself as he awaited Zen's reply.

"Ces I want to make a suggestion. Not a suggestion that I want to make but one that I feel is important for both of us," Zen said. "For years we have been work colleagues and then suddenly last night we became sexual colleagues. Then today we became in love colleagues. I think for the very first time we today realized that we had been in love colleagues for a long time. Now we can go into

this head over heels and mess everything up. I and I am sure that you do not want that to happen. I would like to propose that we go slowly and allow our love relationship to develop. To us we are at the tiny seed part so let's feed it and water it and allow it to develop and grow strong. I know that if we do that that our love will develop and bloom and become very beautiful and strong. Thank you for asking me to marry you. Yes my love I will marry you but not just now. I have said that we must not go head over heels into this."

"My love thank you for agreeing to marry me," Ces said and he pulled her into his arms and well and truly kissed her. "I am so looking forward to having you as Mrs. Professor Ces T. Rauts. My darling remember you now have to say when and where and I will always be ready. All I need is a seconds notice."

Ces stopped and took a deep breath and then added, "My darling Zen I have on more than one occasion said that you were too wise for your own good," Ces said, "Now you have shown it to be true. I agree with what you say. There is no way that I want to lose you now that I have discovered you. I also know that the children or as you call them the tribe will take me to pieces if I was to drop you. One thing we will have to work into our going slowly is that you should consider spending time with the children at least once a week."

Smiling Zen said, "That is a given. There is no ways that I am going to stay away from the tribe. Ces one of these days I want to take the children to our rural home. I know that there will be certain things that can and will cause a problem or two but we can overcome that. Now Ces

as difficult as it is for me to kiss you to say goodbye. Let me do so or I will immediately brake my go slow rule and take you to bed until Monday morning then both of us will not be able to move.”

Zen leaned across and kissed Ces lightly and then quickly got out of the car. Standing on the pavement she asked, “What time will you pick me up tomorrow to go to Melody?”

“I will fetch you at seven tomorrow morning and let me warn you I intend to drop you off here after eight tomorrow evening after we have been to Melody for her evening treatment. Good night my love. I love you Zen or shall I say Thandiswa.”

Without a further word Ces drove away not daring to look back because he knew that he would turn and go back to her.

Chapter 19

Just after eight on Sunday morning Ces drove home. He had picked Zen up just before seven that morning and had driven to Melody. There he had checked her and had given her an injection. He had also phoned Doctor Andy Terry the obstetrician who was looking after her pregnancy. Without hesitation he had come to visit Melody and after examining her had pronounced that her pregnancy was still going well saying that she had about 4 weeks to go.

After reminding David and Melody that he was at the end of a cell phone he and Zen drove to his house. There Zen received a tremendous welcome from the children or the tribe as Zen called them. Ces noted with amusement that the children called her Mommy Zen and was interested to observe that Jon joined in the greetings. He also saw that Zane held onto Zen's hand as if he would never let go of her hand. Noting that he sort of envied Zane as he would like to have held her hand.

While Ces was talking to Marian he noted that the children were huddled around Zen and they were in a discussion. At the end of the discussion Zen, Petra and Zane walked up to him. They stopped in front of him and Zane said, "Dad we go Maybes Lake picnic please."

"Whose idea is that?" Ces asked.

"We talked about that and we all agreed that it is where we would like to go today," Petra said. She then turned to Marian and asked, "Aunty Marian would you

please help Jon, Zen and me to make some sandwiches for our picnic lunch. Then please Auntie Marian will you go with us. We can go in the van. We will all fit in easily and we can show Mommy Zen how we picnic.”

“Yes show Mommy Zen picnic,” Zane said.

“Out of the mouth of babes,” Marian said.

Soon after that Marian, Petra, Zen and Zane disappeared into the kitchen and a while later some exciting smells wafted from the kitchen. While the food making was going on Jon came and sat with Ces. They discussed his hockey playing and his excitement at being chosen for the regional trials that were to take place within the next two weeks.

Just after 10 Ces drove out of the yard in the van. Their departure had been delayed by Zane who wanted to sit on Zen’s lap while she sat on the passenger seat next to Ces who was driving. Everyone had watched while Zen with love and firmness had spoken to Zane and had got him to sit in the seat behind her. She had explained to Zane the danger of sitting on her lap in front and what could happen if they were in an accident.

When Zane condescended to sitting on that seat that Zen wanted him to sit on Marian had turned to Ces and with laughter said, “She don’t take shit from anyone.”

They has spent the day having an blast on the water, as Petra said, because Ces had hired a river boat and had slowly cruised up the dam. They had stopped near a sandbank and enjoyed the picnic lunch. After a lunch rest Zen had taken everyone swimming. She had led the tribe as

she began to call the children in some games that she said were games that she used to play at home when she was Margie's age.

During that time Ces and Marian had sat relaxed in deckchairs, taken from the river boat, on the sandbank. Ces enjoyed watching Zen with the children noting that she was one of them but when a problem occurred between Petra and Margie that she stepped in and sorted the problem out with firmness and love. At one stage Jon had got too rough with Petra and Zen had reprimanded him in such a manner that he was immediately sorry for his actions and apologised to both Petra and Zen. Giving both a kiss on the cheek.

Later when Marian questioned Zen about her ability to control the children she had laughed and said that at home the young girls were expected to be nursemaids to the children who were younger than themselves. In that way the girls learnt how to look after children and were able to apply discipline.

With amazement Ces and Marian watched as Zen took a trial that the twins set for her and turned it into a learning and acceptance occasion. The twins decided to see what Zen would do if they ran around in their bikini panties without their tops on. At first Zen did not react at all and ignored the topless girls. That had upset the twins and they threatened to take off their bikini panties. That had also not got any reaction from Zen. Then apparently in a method to try and test Zen the twins had stripped nude. Once again Zen had ignored the twins as they ran around in the nude. Ces noted that the twin's actions had not fazed the rest of the tribe but that they had accepted the twin's

actions.

Later when they had packed up the twins refused to dress and said that they were going to go home in the nude. Without a word Zen had picked up their clothes and bikinis and put them into her bag. She then told Ces that they were ready to leave. Even though the twins preformed and demanded their clothes Zen would not give in to their demands telling them that they had chosen to go home without clothes and that they had to carry out their choice.

Marian had whispered to Ces that tears, screaming, or shouting had not moved Mommy Zen.

On arrival at home, before they got out of the van, Zen said that everyone had to go to the pool patio where she wanted to talk to them.

Ces and Marian stood on the sideline and watched Zen. She got the children to sit down in front of her. Speaking quietly yet with force she said that she loved each one of them. Then she pointed out that love without discipline was false love. She said that the twins had decided to see what she would do if they were naughty. Zen said that she could have reacted in a number of ways. First of all allowed the twins to get away with their naughtiness which would only have led to further naughtiness. Then she could have punished the twins and made them angry with her for the punishment. She added that the punishment could be, giving the twins a hiding, or making them miss meals, or making them scrub all the floors of the house or some or other punishment. But she had decided that the twins wanted to go without clothes so she let them go without clothes and that the twins would stay without clothes until

they were sorry for their actions.

Almost immediately the one twin put up her hand and Zen addressing her asked, “Yes Aniline?”

“I am sorry that we were naughty Mommy Zen. We did not think that you would react,” Aniline said adding, “Mommy Zen it is not right that you can tell me and Anilies apart. Up to now only Mom could do that.”

“Me too I am very sorry Mommy Zen. We have learnt today that being naughty does not help.” Anilies said adding. “We love you very much.”

“Thank you Anilies,” Zen said, “Remember that I am not the big bad wolf.”

“Now everyone listen to me and listen to me well,” Zen said. “I do not worry about how you dress. There are times when you have to be dressed correctly. You wear a uniform to school. Jon and Petra wear uniforms to play their sport. When Jon gets chosen to play for the regional team he will have to wear their colour uniform to play hockey. Then there are other times when a person can wear what they want to. Now swimming is an example of that. We are all expected to wear bathing costumes. But today Aniline and Anilies decided not to wear any clothes to go swimming. Now let me tell you all that that is not wrong. Back home where I grew up children swam without costumes all the time and no one worried. It was so good to see all of you of the tribe accept the fact that Aniline and Anilies were not wearing bathing costumes and did not make a comment. Now remember that Jon and Zane have different parts from all of you girls but that is normal. You must all accept

that fact and if you see a boy then remember that it is normal. Well now that is all I have to say.”

“Mommy Zen can we go swimming please,” Margie asked.

Zen turned to Ces and asked, “Ces do the tribe have time to go swimming?”

Ces looked at Marian who said, “Supper at six.”

“OK tribe you may swim until five thirty then it’s out and get ready for supper,” Zen said then she added. “Your Dad will be a little late for supper as he has to go and see a patient that is very very ill.”

“Mommy Zen will you come back to us for supper with Dad?” Petra asked.

Before Zen could answer Ces said, “Yes Zen and I will be going to treat Melody then we will come back here and have supper.”

“Mommy Zen will you please put me bed,” Zane asked.

Zen leaned towards Zane and kissed him on his head and said, “Yes Zane if I can get back from the sick patient in time I will come and put you to bed.”

Zen paused and then loudly said, “Last one in the water is a pumpkin.”

Her words led to a mad scramble with the twins hitting the water first as they just jumped in as they were still in the nude. Ces watched as Zen grabbed hold of Zane and

pulled his clothes off and dumped him in the nude in the pool. Ces saw that Margie also stripped out of her clothes and plunged into the pool screaming and giggling. After helping Zane Ces saw Zen strip to her bikini and plunge into the pool just ahead of Petra with Jon hitting the water last of all. As Jon hit the water the rest of the tribe pointed at Jon and yelled, "Pumpkin, pumpkin."

Ces watched Zen spend time with each child before swimming to the side and pulling herself out of the pool. Standing facing the pool she said, "Listen tribe Dad and I are going to Melody. We will be back later. Jon you are responsible to get everyone out of the pool and to the supper table on time. Petra you have to help Aunty Marian with the supper dishes and fix the table for Dad and me. Margie you help the twins get ready for bed after they have bathed Zane. I will come and put Zane to bed. Everyone know what to do?"

"Yes Mommy Zen," Petra said.

Zen walked up to Ces and said, "Give me a minute and I will be ready to go." With that she ran into the house.

"Ces I have never interfered with your life since we got married. I know that I was a pain in the arse when we were kids. But now I am going to interfere. The children or the tribe, as she calls them, will be over the moon if she moves in here. The quicker you marry that girl the better we all will be. But Ces if you do not want to marry her move her in anyway. She will move in with you on any grounds. You need not worry about what the tribe will say if you move her in. To them it goes about her and her alone. Just look how she organized the tribe for bedtime. Then she has

pulled the mat out from under the twins feet as she can tell who is who and today she showed that she accepts no nonsense from any of the tribe. I loved the way she reprimanded Jon with love and firmness.

Prof and Zen went to Melody and Prof supplied her with another pain killing injection. He had been surprised to find Robin with Melody. After giving her older lover her usual kiss Robin explained that the three of them Mary Keera and herself had decided that one would always be with Melody to aid and assist her and to be there for David and Ann. Prof had approved the plan but had said that Robin must be careful that her schoolwork did not suffer. With a giggle Robin had pointed out that Melody was a teacher and that she made sure that she kept up to date with her schoolwork.

Prof also had an opportunity to spend time with David and was able to observe how Ann in an unconscious way was giving David the needed support. As Zen later observed it was plain to see that Melody's idea of a new wife for David and a mother for her baby was coming together.

On returning to the house Ces found that everything that Mommy Zen had arranged had been carried out. Before she and Ces sat down to supper Zen had taken Zane and as promised had put him to bed with a lovely bedtime kiss.

After making sure that all the children were in bed Zen returned to Ces where he and Marian were sitting in the kitchen. As she entered the kitchen she said, "All in bed, all asleep except Petra and Jon." With that she pulled a chair

out and moved it so that she could sit next to Ces.

As she sat down Marian got up and said, "Well it is time that I follow the example of the children and take myself off to bed."

"Please Marian, please sit down and wait a moment or two before you drift off to bed," Zen said, "I am expecting Jon and Petra to come along soon to talk to me. I am going to talk to them in front of the two of you."

"Did they say that they were coming," Marian asked.

"No! But both have a number of questions that they want answered," Zen replied. "I think that they will separately decide to come and talk to me and then find that the other one is also on the way to me and will then come as a pair. I think that is what is going to happen."

"What will they come to talk about?" Ces asked.

"About the fact that the twins and then Zane and Margie swam in the nude. They will have found that they wanted to join them but are not sure if it is right or not," Zen explained.

"How do you know that?" Marian asked.

"I love the tribe," Zen said. She hesitated and then looking at Ces said, "Within an hour your first and second born and I will be nude. I am sorry if you do not like that idea but to me it is of vital importance that both Jon and Petra learn to accept who they are fully and without reservations. Ces you saw what happened to a group of

girls who found out that they could accept who they are and who found out that going nude was not a sin but an exhilarating experience.”

Before Ces could react Jon and Petra sort of crept slowly into the kitchen dressed in their shorty pyjama. Seeing them Zen immediately said, “I have been waiting for both of you. I was just telling Aunty Marian and Dad that I expected you to come to talk to me. I said that I thought that you would have individually have made up your mind to come to me but would have met up with each other on the way here.”

“How did you know that Mommy Zen,” Petra asked.

Before Zen could answer Petra’s question Jon asked, “Mommy Zen do you know what we want to talk about?”

“First questions first,” Zen replied. “I knew that you two would come because I love you both. You are my children, the children of my tribe. Then as to what you two want to know. Well that is easy you both want to know if it is right to swim in the nude.”

“Is it!” Petra said.

“Up to now I have only seen glimpses of the girls without clothes,” Jon said. “Then today the twins were running around without any clothes on. They looks so cool. Then later at home Margie took off all her clothes. She looked different from the twins as she was showing some titties. I so envied them. I just wanted to take off all my clothes and join them.”

“Well why did you not do so?” Zen asked.

“Mommy Zen I did not do so because I was afraid that it was wrong. I did not want to get into your bad books.”

“You Petra why did you not get into the pool without clothes,” Zen asked.

“Like Jon I was afraid of what you would think,” Petra replied.

“Petra please take your shorty pyjama top off,” Zen said.

“Now Mommy Zen?” Petra asked.

“Now please Petra,” Zen said.

Petra stood for a moment looking at Zen and then with a brief movement pulled her shorty pyjama top off and dropped it on the floor. She then turned and proudly faced Jon and Ces showing them her round budding pubic breasts.

Zen allowed time for everyone to look at Petra and then asked her, “Petra how do you feel now?”

“Mommy Zen I feel nothing. It seems right to me to show my Dad and my brother my titties. I feel so free,” Petra replied.

“Now you Jon,” Zen said, “Jon take off your shorty pyjama.”

Without a moment's hesitation Jon pulled his pyjama top off and then dropped his shorty pyjama pants. He then turned right around and when he faced Zen he said, "Mommy Zen I am so thrilled with myself. I have seen a girl and a girl has seen me and it means nothing. It is not ugly like the boys at school say."

"Petra off with your shorty pyjama pants," Zen said.

Before she had completed the comment Petra was in the nude and had flicked kicked her shorty pyjama pants towards Jon who had caught them without a problem. Then she faced Jon and proudly allowed him to look at her.

"Jon, Petra what you two are now doing is body acceptance? You say to each other and the other children of the tribe, we accept you. Of course you can wreck this whole situation by turning it into a sexual situation. But sex is not body acceptance it has no place here at all," Zen said.

"Mommy Zen I want to ask you a question but you must please not be mad with me," Petra asked in a soft hesitant voice.

"My dearest darling daughter you may at any time ask any question that you want to ask," Zen replied. "Remember my sweetheart there is no question that you or Jon or any child of the tribe may not ask. All questions are welcome. Ask please."

"Mommy Zen," Petra slowly asked. "Mommy Zen would you also go about without clothes? Sorry Mommy Zen."

“Petra that is a brilliant question.” Zen replied and then without stopping stood up and stripped out of all her clothes to stand nude. She also turned around so that everyone can see her from all sided.

“Mommy Zen you and Petra are so beautiful,” Jon said.

“Why thank you so much kind sir,” Zen said with laughter in her voice. She then turned and facing Ces said, “Dad it is your turn.”

Ces looked at Zen in surprise but knew that he had no choice but to carry out Zen’s instruction. Looking at her he knew that she would shame him in front of Jon and Petra if he did not strip. With slow deliberate movements he pulled all his clothes off and then also turned in a circle. He was most amazed that he was at complete rest and suddenly realized what he was doing and was very proud of himself.

To everyone’s surprise Aunty Marian stood up and without a comment stripped out of her clothes and then said, “Jon, Petra when your father and I were younger about your age we always went swimming without bathing costumes and we used to do so until I married Dodd and Dad married your mother, Mary-Louse. You two will find such love for all of us by going around in full acceptance of each other. Now I think it is time for a cool drink each. Don’t you all think?”

Some hour later Zen said, “Now you two better go off to bed. Its school tomorrow and you cannot sit in class and sleep.”

Without a word both Jon and Petra picked up their shorty pyjama and proceeded to climb into them.

“Ugh!” Petra said, “It is much nicer to be without clothes.”

“Mommy Zen will you be here when we wake up tomorrow morning,” Jon asked.

“No Jon I have to go home just now. I have no right to sleep here tonight,” Zen replied.

“Mommy Zen you can sleep with Dad anytime you want. You fit here. You are our Mommy Zen and we need you here. That is not because Aunty Marian is not here for us but you must be here for Dad. Since Mother went home Dad has been all alone. He needs you. So if you want to please sleep here with Dad. We will be so pleased if you do that. Good night Mommy Zen love you.”

With that Jon and Petra walked out of the kitchen towards their bedrooms.

After they left Marina stood up and bending down picked up her clothes and walked towards the doorway. She stopped and said, “Well you two you now have to make a decision. Do you or don’t you spend the night together as has been suggested by your children. I say your children, well they are your children. Ces you are Dad and you Zen are Mommy Zen to each child. Good night you two see both of you at six.” With that Marina walked out of the kitchen leaving Ces and Zen alone.

Ces and Zen sat looking at each other. For a while they

just sat looking at each other and then as if on command they both began to speak. Realizing that the other one was talking they both stopped talking.

“You first,” Zen said.

“My darling the other day you said that we must go slow and let our love develop. You spoke about letting a small seed develop and grow. Well my darling, Mommy Zen the ball is now in your court. I have a double bed in my room. You are invited to share it with me. Share it with or without connecting. Mommy Zen you have heard what the children have said. You have heard what Marina said. You have heard what Dad has said. Remember it is your call. I want to say whatever you decide will be accepted without anything being held against you. So my darling my Mommy Zen now it is over to you.”

Chapter 20

Far away Ces heard a voice say, “Dad the TV is all fuzzy. Please help me get it right.”

Slowly Ces opened his eyes and looked at Zane who stood next to the bed. Later he was to say to Zen that Zane’s whole face changed when he saw her next to him in the bed. For a moment Zane just stood staring at Zen and then said, “Morning Mommy Zen. Nice you sleep Dad.”

He then stood still for a while then turned and ran out of the bedroom shouting, “Petra Mommy Zen sleeps by Dad. Petra come see Mommy Zen sleep by Dad.”

It seemed to Ces that before one could blink an eye all the children were in his bedroom. He sent up a silent prayer that after they had connected that Zen had insisted that he and she wear T-shirts. He had moaned but had got out of bed and had taken 2 oversized T-shirts and they had each dressed in one.

All the children had kissed Mother Zen good morning as they came into the bedroom after which they had piled onto the bed with Prof and Zen. Ces saying later to Marian that they all seemed to accept the fact that Zen was supposed to be in bed with him in the morning.

As he watched the actions the children he thought back to the previous evening. He had put Zen in a position that she had to make the decision as to whether she went home or spent the night with him. Then she also had to decide if they were to connect or not. He watched Zen for a long time as she just sat still. He felt that he can see her brain ticking over as she wondered what to do.

My Melody

Then suddenly she stood up and said, “Come Ces let’s get to bed I think the next four weeks are going to be very busy with the collation of the bra research, and the clinics and Melody and the baby coming as well as getting married.”

Ces stood up and pulled her into his arms and kissed her and said, “Thank you my darling.”

They had gone to bed and slowly and softly had connected leading to total satisfaction for both and had then drifted into dreamland luckily dressed in the T-shirts.

Ces contemplations were broken when he looked up at the doorway to the bedroom and saw Marian standing there with a broad smile on her face. Seeing Ces look at her she nodded her head and mouthed, “congratulations.”

Looking around Ces had to smile. Jon and Petra were sitting on the foot of the bed sort of leaning against each other. Margie had moved so that she was sitting next to Zen on the side of the bed. The twins were lying in the middle of the bed looking at Zen. Somehow Zane had wormed his way into bed and sat between Ces and Zen.

Ces was conscious that after the immediate burst of excitement and joy at the fact that Mommy Zen was with him the tribe had quietened down and the bed was a place of quite companionship.

The silence was broken by Margie asking, “Mommy Zen please say that you are now always going to live with us and be Mommy Zen to us all the time?”

As the question was asked so Ces was aware of the fact that the atmosphere suddenly became charged with electricity as everyone waited for the reply.

Ces was aware that Zen also felt the change in the tribe as they all awaited her answer.

Zen took a deep breath and then replied saying, "Listen everyone at this moment I am not married to Dad. We will be marrying soon. I am not sure of the date but Dad will organize it and then I can move in here and live with you."

Before Zen could go on Petra interrupted and said, "Mommy Zen we do not worry if you stay with us until you and Dad are married. Please get married soon."

"Marry soon please Mommy Zen," Zane said.

"Mommy Zen please become our Mommy Zen all the time," one of the twins said.

"Aniline one of these days I will be Mommy Zen fulltime. Until then Dad and I will talk about what we are to do," Zen replied.

"It is not fair that you know us apart Mommy Zen," Aniline said with a giggle.

"Now everybody listen to me," Zen said. "Jon please see that everyone gets ready for school. Also check that Petra is ready. Petra make sure that Margie has got everything for her school. Margie check that the twins are ready to go and make Mrs. Julie Bain, their teachers, life

difficult. Twins get Zane ready for play school. You all have to be at the breakfast table at 7. You all have just over half an hour. Away you go. Nobody is to mess up.”

Chattering and laughing the children got off the bed and walked past Marian who moved aside to stand just inside the bedroom. When Zane walked out of the bedroom after kissing Mommy Zen Marian said, “Thank you Zen. Thank you for loving my brother and the tribe. I support the tribe in their wish that you two get hitched asap and until then that that bed becomes your sleeping place in between other things.” Smiling she walked out of the bedroom as Ces pulled Zen into his arms.

Later that day Prof asked Phyllis to contact Captain Jason Bellingham as he wanted to talk to him. As he walked away from Phyllis she said, “Prof do you know why Zen is so wound up. It looks as if she is flying. When I asked her what was going on she just giggled and said that Melody’s baby was nearly here. You know what Prof I think that she is lying to me. Do you know what gives?”

While Phyllis was talking Cherie moved closer and said, “Prof I have known Zen for more than 4 years and have never seen her like this she seems to be walking on air.”

“Maybe she had discovered the love of her life,” Prof said.

“Yes that could be it,” Cherie said. “I must ask her.”

While she was talking Zen walked into the reception and said, “Ces.... Prof we are ready for you.”

Before Prof could react Cherie asked, “Zen why are you floating today? Have you found a boyfriend? Are you in love?”

Giggling Zen walked to Prof and grabbed his hand and laughing said, “I have decided to marry Prof. I am going to make him the love of my life.”

“Ha! Ha! Funny. You will have to stand in line. I am first in line,” Cherie said giggling adding, “Then there is Phyllis and then Carline followed by Sarah followed by Myola followed by Rayleigh. Then we can add your name.”

With a laugh Prof said, “I think that I must become a Mormon then I can take each of you as my wives. Then I can sit at home on the pool patio and learn to smoke a pipe and just relax whilst all of my wives work and bring money in so I can live like a king.”

“You wish! Come along before you start learning to smoke a pipe,” Zen said as she giggling walked towards the examination room.

“See I am not married to one of my wives and they are already bossing me about,” Prof said with a smile as he followed Zen.

On entering the examination room Zen quickly kissed him and as she walked away to fetch the first patient she said, “They can never say that I did not tell them that we were going to get married.”

A little later while the patient was giving the urine

My Melody

sample and changing into a gown Prof thought of the visit to Melody. She was just holding her own but was completely at bed-rest being looked after by Keera and Ann that day. Both Keera and Ann were out of the room and Prof was examining Melody when she suddenly asked, “Prof since when have you and Zen been an item?”

“How do you know?” Zen asked as she took Melody’s hand in hers.

“Both of you have that look about you,” Melody said. “Your love electricity flows all over the place. It has been like that since you went on the research project. When you came back from there you have hardly been able to keep your hands off each other. I’m right aren’t I?”

Zen looked at Prof who nodded his head and then she turned to Melody and said, “Yes Melody we are going to get married. We have been in love for a long time but have not told each other and then at that weekend we came to the realization as to how we felt. Now we are planning to get married. I am over the moon. Melody I am going to get an instant family and I cannot wait.”

“Prof come here,” Melody said as she reached out and taking Prof’s hand drew his face down to hers then softly kissed him and followed that up by saying, “Prof you know how to choose them.”

“Please Melody not a word please,” Zen requested.

“Like you are about Ann so I will be about this,” Melody replied. She hesitated and then said, “Prof, Zen yesterday I spent time talking to Denton Carver from Last

Rest Funeral Services. I have arranged the following with him. When I go home he will fetch me then cremate me and get rid of my ashes wherever. I do not want a funeral service or a memorial service. I do not want anything to happen where I am remembered. If you and Zen want to remember me then you can drink a glass of Coke some or other time. Otherwise nothing. Promise me that.”

“We promise,” Prof said as he bend down and gave Melody another kiss.

“I wish I was able to attend your wedding but I suppose that will be later,” Melody softly stated.

“I am not going to wait so long,” Prof said. “I intend to get the rope around my neck as quick as I can.”

Prof review of the morning was broken when Zen returned with the patient in to the examination room and he started work.

Just after 13.00 Phyllis informed Prof that Captain Jason Bellingham was there to see him. When he came in to the examination office he looked at Prof with raised eyebrows and asked, “What’s up? I don’t know of a case that you can be involved in?”

With a smile Prof replied saying, “No! No case. Something personal.” Prof hesitated and then said, “I would like to get married and I need to know how to go about getting it done quietly and quickly. No there is no mystery it is just important that we get hitched asap for my family’s sake. I am not being forced into marriage and there is no baby on its way. Can you advise how to arrange that it happens yesterday?”

“So you have finally made up your mind to marry her,” Captain Jason Bellingham said. “I wondered when it would happen. Now let’s see when do you want it to happen?”

“What do you mean that you wondered when it was going to happen?” Prof asked.

“To that nurse of yours,” Captain Jason Bellingham replied.

“How the hell do you know that?” Prof said adding, “I only found out a few days ago.”

“Well when we worked on the groping case together I saw that way that she looked at you. Man if a woman looked at me like that I would get such heart palpitations that only a marriage could cure,” Captain Jason Bellingham replied. He then continued, “Prof I need a date and a time please.”

Prof picked the phone up and asked Phyllis to sent Zen to him. When she entered the room Captain Bellingham walked up to her and said, “I am thrilled that you have finally caught him. Congratulations.”

“Zen, Captain Bellingham needs to know when and what time,” Prof said.

Without hesitation Zen said, “Here at 18.30 tomorrow or the next evening.”

Captain Bellingham nodded his head and took out his cell phone dialled a number and moving away began to talk into the phone. While he was talking Zen said to Prof, “Is that OK with you my love?”

“Oh yes my sweetheart!” Prof replied. “I cannot wait.”

They saw Captain Bellingham close his cell and as he walked up to them he said, “All arranged for tomorrow evening at 18.30 here and Major E Bates of the Salvation Army will do the necessary. I have a list of documents that he needs. If you can collect them and let me know when you have them I will see that he gets them.” He then picked up a pen and a piece of note pad from Prof’s desk and listed the documents that he wanted to hand to Prof, but that Zen took.

She glanced at the list and then asked, “Cool drink, tea, coffee, Captain?”

“Coke please, Zen.” He replied.

“While you and Ces drink Coke I will go and make copies of the documents that you require. You can get them certified and hand them to Major E Bates. Thank you so much Captain,” Zen said as she left the room.

Shortly thereafter Phyllis brought a coke and a glass for each one and left Prof and the Captain talking about the Captains last case of child abuse.

A while later Zen brought copies of all the documents needed by the captain and handed them to him. He quickly checked them and said, “Prof I can see why you want to marry this gorgeous creature. She is on the ball.”

“Captain Bellingham a request from our side please,” Zen requested. “Please not a word to anyone at all. Ces and

My Melody

I will have the whole department here for the wedding but they will only find out when they arrive. The only people who will know about the wedding are Major Bates, you, Ces and I and I would like to keep it that way.”

“Not a problem,” Captain Bellingham said. “Now let me go and give these papers to Major Bates so we can get the paper work done.”

After greeting them Captain Bellingham walked out of the office and Zen turned to Ces and said, “Ces I am taking this afternoon and tomorrow off. I have to make a number of arrangements so I am going to do that now. I will see you tonight but please Ces not a word to anyone. I will arrange everything and tomorrow at 18.30 we will become man and wife.”

Zen paused to kiss Ces and then continued saying, “I will now go and fetch Carline to be with you. She can be with me when you see the next patient and see what gives and then she can stand in for me here this afternoon and tomorrow. I will go with you to Melody this afternoon and tomorrow.”

Zen gave Ces a quick kiss and then disappeared and soon returned with Carline dressed in her white lab coat. After orientating her Zen took her leave and left her and Prof to see the patients.

When Zen returned to the department just before 17.00 Prof was able to report that Carline had not messed up to badly and that all the booked patients were seen.

While at Melody Zen had told her about the wedding and had sworn her to secrecy. She had then asked Melody

to act as her maid of honour. The request had reduced Melody to tears. After Melody had come back to herself the two of them had arranged for her to get David to bring her and Ann to the wedding. She was going to use as pretext that she had to come for a test and that by coming later she would not get so tired as she would not have to wait. Zen had also spoken to Keera and organized that she brings Robin and Mary telling her that they would need that three of them to be there to help with Melody as she underwent tests.

That evening the children had been over the moon when they realized that Mommy Zen was to spend another night with them. Ces had watched her as she flitted between all the children. Just after supper Zen had called everyone together and said, "Tomorrow evening just after six Aunty Marina will be bringing all of you to the department where Dad and I work. Dad has just got four new girls to work for him and they have asked to meet all of you as Dad speaks about you and he wants them to know who you are. The girls have said that they will have some piazza for you all too enjoy"

The tribe was thrilled with the arrangements and Ces heard Zen explain that he could not fetch them as he had to see Melody his sick patient and would only get there at the start of the party.

Just after 1715 the following afternoon Zen phoned Ces asked if the coast was clear. Ces assured her that he was the only person in the department. She then asked him to come to the front door where she met him and gave him a number of parcels that he was to carry to the waiting room. Some 20 minutes later the waiting room was transformed

into a type of church. With flowers all over and the chairs so arranged that they all faced one way. Zen had also placed a table in such a position that it acted as a podium. When she was happy she closed the door and took the remainder of the packages and carried them into the examination room where she set out a feast of Pizza and cool drinks.

Then at 18.00 Zen sent Ces to change into black slacks and a black golf shirt. When he returned Zen kissed him and said that she would see him at the wedding and walked away. Just after she left Ces found himself busy as everyone began to arrive. Prof escorted everyone into the examination room. He was surprised to receive the Headman and the Mamma who arrived without warning. The Headman telling Prof that Zen had phoned them and had said that they had to be at the department at 18.00. Mamma said that they were staying in Zen's flat. Melody arrived supported by David and Ann as she was pushed in a wheelchair.

Marina brought the tribe who were immediately made a fuss of by the research assistants just on 18.30. At the same time a stout middle aged man arrived who introduced himself as Major E Bates of the Salvation Army.

Prof then raised his voice and asked everyone to please to move into the waiting room. Carline was the first to open the door and when she saw the set up she let out a yell that attracted everyone's attention. They all streamed into the waiting room speculating why it was so made up.

Prof raised his voice and asked everyone to take a seat then he would explain what was going on. Everyone took

their seats and quietened down as Prof and Major Bates and Jon walked to the front and turned and faced everyone. They had just taken their place when the wedding march sounded. For an instant there was silence then as if someone had pushed the sound button the room exploded with noise as everyone realized what was going on.

Into the noise Zen walked dressed in a white knee length figure hugging dress. The dress highlighted her pair of small breasts that sat high on her chest with her small nipples standing at attention. Proudly she walked to join Ces followed by Melody pushed by Petra.

Just behind them Captain Jason Bellingham and his wife Betz were walking with Betz taking photos. It was only then that Prof remembered that Betz was a professional photographer. He realized that Zen had arranged for her to photograph the wedding and she later produced a brilliant photo album showing the whole wedding.

Major Bates asked for and got silence. He then announced that they were all gathered there to witness the wedding of Ces and Zen. He then asked if anyone was against the wedding and when there was no reaction he proceeded with joy and elegance to marry Ces and Zen.

He had just pronounced them man and wife saying that Ces could kiss the new Mrs. Professor Ces T. Rauts when Zane broke loose from Marina and charged towards Zen and Ces shouting, "Mommy Zen. Mommy Zen stay by us. We loved you."

After that the wedding was celebrated with joy by

everyone. Ces was thrilled when the headman came and gripped his hand thanking him for taking his Thandiswa to be his lawful wife. The pizza wedding feast was enjoyed by all. Phyllis came to Prof and Zen and said that they had fooled everyone because no one had known about their intention to get married. With a giggle Zen reminded Phyllis that she had told her the previous day that she was going to marry the Prof.

Later Prof and Zen left the Department to spend their first night as man and wife in a local five star hotel. Zen promised the tribe that she would be there for them from the next day.

Just as they were leaving the Department the Headman came up to them and said, “Indoda Makula now that you have taken Thandiswa to be your white man’s wife you will have to return to your village to take her in the traditional way.”

Having made that pronouncement the Headman and the Mamma took their leave.

Chapter 21

The week after the wedding was a time of getting everything arranged? Zen quietly changed the arrangements at home. She made Jon responsible for all the children. Petra was responsible for Margie who in turn had to look after Aniline and Anilies. They were responsible for Zane. At first the arrangement led to problems which Mommy Zen took in her stride and soon sorted out. Marina reported to Ces that the new arrangements made her life 100% easier. She also stated that the children all began to develop a pride in themselves and in the child that they cared for.

One afternoon Ces and Zen arrived home just after 3 having decided to play hooky after a breast clinic and go home instead of returning to the office. On arriving at home they were met with silence. They quietly walked through the house and then heard laughter and chatter coming from the pool area. Together they walked through the French doors onto the patio and stood and watched the children playing in the pool with Marian standing in the pool watching them. Ces immediately noted that there was not a sight of a bit of clothing on anyone. They stood quietly for a while and then Zen signalled that Ces was to follow her as she began to strip. When they were stripped Zen took Ces by the hand and they silently walked to stand at the poolside. They stood there for a gentle moment watching the children play catch while Auntie Marina lent against the side of the pool.

Suddenly Zane saw them and let out a yell saying, “Dad and Mommy Zen here.”

My Melody

As Ces was later to say that was the end of catch. Ces walked to sit on the patio next to Marian while Zen plunged into the pool and joined the tribe. Later that evening Jon and Petra came to the kitchen where the three adults were sitting. Jon inquired how Dad felt that his tribe spent a lot of time in the nude. Both he and Petra were thrilled when Ces pointed out to them that he did not have a problem. He also stated that he was thrilled at the way that the children were all united as a group. Giggling Petra stated that a tribe could not be otherwise or then there was disharmony between them.

Prof noted that nothing changed at work except he thought that the other treated Zen with more reverence.

Prof arranged that Phyllis would work in to his patient schedule a midday visit to Melody who was getting weaker by the day and suffering from more pain. Prof was interested to note that the obstetrician, Doctor Andy Terry was also a daily visitor to Melody.

10 days after the wedding Prof suddenly got a phone call from David who informed him that Melody had gone into labour. He got Phyllis to reschedule all his appointments and he and Zen drove to be with Melody.

On arrival they found that the house was like a waiting room. Robin, Mary and Keera were waiting in the lounge and were joined soon afterwards by Carline, Sarah, Myola, and Rayleigh. Then Cherie and Phyllis arrived.

Prof and Zen joined Doctor Andy Terry, David and Ann in the bedroom where Melody lay. With Zen assisting Doctor Terry they delivered Melody of a perfect baby girl.

An exhausted Melody was thrilled at the birth and later took Prof's hand and said, "Prof you promised that I would live to deliver my baby and you did that. Thank you so much. She then pulled Prof closer and in a voice that only he could hear added, "Prof I love you and am envious of Zen."

Just after the birth Zen had on Melody's instructions handed the baby to Ann who had held the baby tightly against her breast before she passed it on to David who handled the child as if it would break before passing it onto Melody. As Melody took the baby from David she said, "Hello Melody-Ann welcome to the world. Remember that I am your birth mother but that Ann is your life mother."

Prof looked at Zen and saw tears streaming down her cheeks. She reached out and took the baby and went to clean it wiping off all the vernix then carried her out to the waiting hoards. All the women went bonkers about Melody-Ann and all were thrilled that the birth had gone so well.

Later everyone dispersed with only Prof and Zen remaining. Before he left Dr. Doctor Terry made sure that Melody was alright leaving instructions that if he was needed that he was to be contacted immediately.

Prof and Zen left after making sure that the tired and exhausted Melody was settled and that she was pain free.

During their visits over the next 7 days they were both aware that Melody was just holding her own. She was very tired but luckily pain free. When they were with her on the 8 day after the birth of Melody-Ann Melody took Prof's

My Melody

hand in hers and held it for a long while. Then she softly and slowly thanked him for having the privilege of giving birth to Melody-Ann. She then turned to Zen and told her that she must look after Prof as he was a wonderful man. With a giggle she told Zen that if she was not so sick when she met Prof that she would have tried to steal him away. She then wished her and Prof a long and happy life.

The following evening when they visited Melody said that she had seen the angels coming to fetch her and reminded that that she did not want any funeral or remembrance service.

The following morning when Prof and Zen arrived at Melody's room they found that she was asleep. As Prof touched her neck to check her pulse she slowly opened her eyes and slowly reached out to take hold of Prof's hand. In a whisper she said, "I asked the angels to wait until I had had a chance to say the following:- Thank you for all your care; Thank you for making sure that I could deliver Melody-Ann; Thank you for not telling David and Ann that I had planned for them to get married and they will. I spoke to Ann this morning and have tasked her with the task of looking after David and Melody-Ann; Thank you for taking Zen to be your wife and for allowing me to be part of that wonderful wedding; Please do not forget that you must go and attend your second wedding in Zen's village as the Headman invited you to do. I will not be there in body but I will be there in spirit. Now the second last comment, please continue to be such a fantastic breast doctor. My last comment is meant from the bottom of my heart when I say Ces I love you very much."

Prof felt Melody squeeze his hand and close her eyes.

The suddenly her hand relaxed and slipped out of his grip. In that instant he realized that she had slipped from life to eternal pain-free existence. As he bent over Melody's lifeless body her heard Melody-Ann as she cried. Without saying anything Zen moved and straightened Melody's body crossing her arms over her breasts. Looking at her Prof saw that she was weeping and did not worry that her tears splashed all over. At the same time he realized that tears were coursing down his own cheeks.

Zen came and kissed him then went to tell David and Ann about the passing of Melody.

Prof and Zen stayed there until Denton Carver From Last Rest Funeral Services had come to remove Melody. As he took her away he said, "I have been instructed to cremate the body and to dispose of the ashes so that no one knows where it is disposed." Without further comment he had left.

Just as Prof and Zen were preparing to leave David approached Zen and asked her please to inform Melody's close friends about her death.

Prof drove back to the department and there Zen called the research assistants and Phyllis and Cherie to come to Prof's office. There she informed them about Melody and as the tears flowed she was there with Prof to supply comfort.

Zen also phoned Keera and told her. As she did so she heard Keera's tears flow. Keera asked if she had informed Robin and Mary. On receiving a negative answer she told Zen that she was going to fetch the two girls and bring

them to the department.

About 40 minutes later a red eye and weeping Keera, Robin and Mary arrived and joined the others as they spoke about Melody.

Without saying a word Carline had asked Rayleigh to go with her. They returned a while later and in silence Carline walked around and handed each person a bottle of Coke. When everyone had a Coke in a voice that threatened to break Carline said, "Each of us had got to know Melody especially after she spoke to us at the orientation camp where she spoke to us about the choice that she had to make. She kept her side of the promise and allowed Melody-Ann to enter the world. Now she had gone to a place where she is pain free and where she is at eternal rest. I know that Melody said that she did not want a memorial or remembrance service. Well this is neither all that we are doing is raising our bottles of Coke in greeting of a wonderful person. Someone who we loved very much and someone who taught each of us so much. Please, as you think of Melody drink your Coke."

Zen walked and stood next to Carline and said, "When we went to Melody today she said that she had asked the angels to wait before they took her away. She wanted to talk to Prof. I am not going to tell what she said. All I want to say is that she said that she would not be at my and Ces's traditional wedding in body but that she would be there in spirit."

Zen kept quiet as she struggled to control the tears. She wiped them away she spoke again saying, "I would like to invite each of you to join me and Ces as we renew our wedding vows according to the tradition of my people. At

this moment I do not have a date but it will be a Friday, Saturday and Sunday. As soon as I have heard from the Headman I will inform everyone. It will be appreciated if all of you here can join Ces or as he is called in my village, Indoda Makula, as he takes Thandiswa that is my village name, to be his woman. Today Melody promised that she will be present in spirit and will bless us. So please everyone, please come I will let you know when. Then the last thing that Melody said was that Prof and I am sure she meant all who work with him that they must always be very good breast researchers.”

For the next two hours or so the group sat together and as the mood took them spoke about Melody. When Sarah inquired why there were no patients coming to the department Phyllis stated that she had phoned all the scheduled patients for that day saying that due to death in the family the patient’s appointments were cancelled and would be rescheduled.

On hearing that comment Keera said that she was absolutely correct in saying that there was a death in the family.

Later Prof told everyone that the department was closing down for the day and that they were all free to do their own thing for the day.

Zen later told Prof that the research assistants had all gone with Carline to visit Ann and David and to see Melody-Ann. She had added that Keera had taken Robin and Mary to do the same thing.

Chapter 22

The two weeks after Melody's death passed quietly and without major problems. The only major disruption was Jon's hockey trials. On the Saturday morning of the trials Ces took the tribe, Zen and Marian to the Astra turf where the trials were to be held. It was a noisy and excited group of people that sat on the sideline and cheers and yelled every time that Jon touched the ball. Ces was later to say that when Jon scored his two goals the noise that the tribe made was heard at least 100 kilos away.

Zen told a laughing Marian that she was sure that the tribe had caused a minor earthquake when Jon name was announced as being part of the regional hockey team. They had jumped up and down and had yelled and shouted when the announcer had announced Jon name.

On the way home Jon had been treated like the king of the tribe. Ces had told him that he had the right to choose how he would like to celebrate his selection in the regional hockey team.

Without hesitation Jon said that he would like to have a pizza party at the pool at home and that everyone who swam and those who did not swim were to attend in their beautiful topless bottomless clothes.

Once again the tribe went bonanza shouting and clapping and cheering at Jon's proposed party.

Ces stopped at the Pizza Hut and Jon asked Mommy Zen to go into the Pizza Hut with him to help him buy the pizza.

When everyone got home they all dispersed to their rooms to get rid of their clothes and soon after that they were all in the water without a stitch of clothing to be seen. They all enjoyed Jon's choice of meal.

Prof sat on an easy chair saying that it was still too far from Christmas for him to swim but he was also in the nude. Mommy Zen and Aunty Marian were in the pool with the tribe. All having a great time.

Suddenly the doorbell rang and Petra grabbed a towel and wrapped it around her body and ran to see who was there. After a while she walked onto the pool patio with Carline and Rayleigh following her. When the two saw the way that the tribe was dressed they came to a sudden stop not knowing what to do.

Seeing them Zen jumped out of the pool and as she passed Ces on the way to the girls out of the corner of her mouth said, "Stay as you are. They have seen you so stay like that."

Zen welcomed the girls and immediately Carline apologised for interrupting the family time saying that she wanted to ask the Prof's advice. Zen led her to where Prof was sitting and told him that Carline needed his advice. Zen suggested that the girls find a soft spot on the patio floor and sit on it. She then turned and began to walk away. Carline immediately said, "Please Zen do not go away. Stay with us and maybe you can help."

Once they were seated Prof said, "Talk Carline."

"Prof this has nothing to do with breast but neither

Rayleigh nor I know how to handle the situation. I will ask Rayleigh to talk to you,” Carline said.

“I have a friend who came to me and knowing that I work in the breast unit asked me to please help her,” Rayleigh said and continued saying, “She has found out that she is preggies and does not know what to do. The problem is that her brother has been making her have sex with him over the past six months. Now she is pregnant and does not know what to do. She says that her brother will deny that he has had sex with her and that the family will throw her out into the street. I did not know what to do so I went to ask Carline for help as she always knows what to do. She said that we must come and talk to you. Please Prof how can we help her?”

“How old she?” Zen asked.

“She turns fourteen tomorrow,” Rayleigh replied. “I know her as she lives next door to us.”

“Fourteen. That is a case for Jason Bellingham,” Zen said.

“Rayleigh this is a serious case. Is it possible for you to bring the girl to see me? I will ask a friend who can help to be with us and that way we can help her and prevent her from getting into further trouble.”

“Prof I will bring her to wherever you want her. At this moment she is in Carline’s flat,” Rayleigh said.

Prof looked at Zen who said, “Talk to Prof while I see if I can get Jason Bellingham to visit us.”

While Zen went to phone Jason Bellingham Carline and Rayleigh sat and watched the children swimming. Petra and Jon swam towards them and from the poolside Jon asked, “Dad is it OK if we come closer.”

“It’s OK. I will tell you when to disappear if needs be,” Ces said.

Without a problem both Jon and Petra got out of the pool and walked to greet Carline and Rayleigh unconcerned at their non dress. They stood and exchanged small talk. Then Petra mentioned that Jon had been chosen as a member of the regional hockey team. At that Carline had got up and had hugged and kissed Jon as she congratulated him. Rayleigh had followed her example. Just after that Zen reappeared and said that Jason Bellingham would meet them in the department within 20 minutes.

At that Prof sent Carline and Rayleigh to fetch the girl and said that they would meet her at the Department. Zen then called the tribe together and told them that Dad had been called to an emergency. She explained that Aunty Marian would look after them as she had to go with Dad. Ces was surprised at how the children accepted the fact that he had to fix an emergency. All the girls kissed him and Jon and Zane hugged him. Mommy Zen got a kiss from everyone.

On the way to the department Zen made Ces stop at a pharmacy where she bought a pregnancy test kit. She said that she had to find out if the girl was definitely pregnant before they started doing things.

When they got to the Department Jason Bellingham was waiting for them. They entered the Department and Zen brought him up to date as to the case as she knew it saying that Carline and Rayleigh were on the way with the girl.

A short while later Carline and Rayleigh arrived with a petite Indian girl that looked younger than her fourteen years of age.

Rayleigh introduces her as Sasha Naidoo. Zen immediately took her to pass urine and used the pregnancy test kit to prove if she was pregnant.

When she returned Jason Bellingham talked to her. Zen was later to say she was so impressed at the way that Jason Bellingham spoke to Sasha. He spoke with love and asked questions in such a manner that Sasha spoke without realizing that she was supplying information. During the question and answer question time Sasha explained that her brother, Shelton, made her have sex with him the first time as he had caught her masturbation. He had said that if she did not then he would tell the family that she committed a sin against the gods and then her father would stitch her womanhood closed. She added that once he had had his way with her he kept on demanding it sometimes up to 5 or 6 times a week.

The whole time that Sasha spoke she kept her composure without breaking down then when she mentioned that she thought that she was pregnant she broke down and wept.

Zen put her arms around her and asked her why she thought that she was pregnant. To which Sasha said that

she knew that she was pregnant as she had stopped bleeding every time that her brother had her. She explained that each time her brother had her she had bled but had suddenly stopped so she knew that she was pregnant.

When Ces looked at her he saw Zen shake her head and knew that the pregnancy test had shown a negative result. Looking at Jason Bellingham Ces realized that he had caught the indication that Sasha was not pregnant.

Jason Bellingham speaking quietly to Sasha got her to explain that her brother always raped her outdoors as she made such a noise when he took her that he was afraid that they would be heard if he took her indoors. Weeping she said that her brother always told her where she must meet him. Then he would have her and then leave her to recover and find her own way home. Sasha added that her brother had told her to meet him in a open field near their home at 19.00 that evening.

At that Jason Bellingham had asked Sasha if she wanted the rapes stopped and she replied that she would do anything to stop them. Jason Bellingham then organized a plan of action to catch Sasha's brother, Shelton, in the act of rape and so once and for all bring about a stop to her being raped. Even though Sasha was afraid she agreed to go along with the plan.

Just after 22.00 Ces, Zen, Carline, Rayleigh, Sasha and Jason Bellingham walked into the kitchen at Ces's home. The capture of Shelton had been successful but as a result of that when her family had been informed they had reacted and had kicked Sasha out of their house saying that

she dishonoured the family name by allowing her brother to rape her.

Just after arriving in the kitchen Jon and Petra arrived to find out what all the commotion was about. Zen told the two of them that they were not to ask anything about what was what but they were to accept that Sasha was going to stay with them as a family for the next period of time. That had come about after her family had kicked Sasha out of the house and Jason Bellingham said that she would be placed in a place of safety until she could, after the case, be placed with a foster family.

Zen had immediately told Jason Bellingham what he could do with his idea as Sasha was going to stay with them. After a discussion Jason Bellingham agreed to Zen's suggestion and they brought Sasha home.

Zen made a hot drink for everyone and they sat around sort of talking now and again. Then Carline stated that she was thankful to see that Prof's belonged to a nude family. She said that she had been so thrilled to see the love and joy that the family had one for another.

With a giggle Rayleigh turned to Jon and said that he was responsible for letting her do something that she had never ever done before. When Jon asked what that was with a shy laugh and a soft giggle Rayleigh said that it was the first time that she had held a nude boy and kissed one.

Jon immediately reacted by saying that he was not present when she hugged him while he was nude.

Still giggling Rayleigh said that it had happened when

she had hugged and kissed him to congratulate on being chosen as a member of the regional hockey team. At that Jon stated that he remembered.

After listening to the exchange between Jon and Rayleigh Sasha asked, “Rayleigh did you hug and kiss a nude boy and not get raped?”

“Sasha,” Rayleigh replied, “Prof’s home is a place where anyone can go around nude in the knowledge that they are safe. When we came to ask his help today we found the whole family around the pool and they were all swimming in the nude as they usually do. There was no sex in sight nor has there ever been.”

“How is that?” Sasha asked adding, “If Jon took off his clothes then he will just want to have sex. He would not stop; all he will want is sex.”

“I’m sorry that you think so Sasha,” Jon said. “We as a family go about in the nude and up to this point I am still a virgin and I intend to be one for a very long time. Petra and I are often together in the nude but I have never ever thought of sex with her and as far as I know she is also a virgin.”

Sasha sat looking at Jon with a puzzled look on her face then said, “Jon if you saw Rayleigh in the nude won’t you jump her and fuck her?”

“No Sasha. It will be great to see Rayleigh in the nude but if I did then it would be so what. She has seen me without clothes and even hugged and kissed me when I have been nude. Sasha if you listened to us talking just now

then you would have heard me say that I did not remember Rayleigh hugging and kissing me in nude me. That shows that it meant nothing to me. There is no ways that if I see a woman without clothes that I want to have sex with her. My Dad has taught us all that the highest honour that you can pay a woman is to have sex with her, sex that is based on total holistic love.”

“That is so strange,” Sasha said. “Shelton never saw me nude all he saw was my thing. But seeing my thing made him rape me. He never saw me without clothes he always made me take off my jeans and panties and then he dropped his jeans and underpants around his legs then rape me then he made me pull on my jeans and took my panties away. He never returned my panties.”

“Sasha you were raped by your brother,” Petra said. As she spoke she stood up and walked to Sasha and wrapping her arms around her hugged and kissed her.

“What did he do with the panties?” Jason Bellingham asked.

“He used to write on the panties,” Sasha said.

“What did he write on the panties?” Jason Bellingham once again asked.

“He wrote the date where he had raped me and what he had felt. He wrote where the rape had happened and then hid the panties in his bottom draw which he kept locked.”

“How do you know all of this?”

“One day I saw him unlocking the bottom draw of his cupboard and then saw him look at my panties. He laughed as he did that. Then he locked the draw and hid the key behind the cupboard,” Sasha said. “When he went out one evening I went and took the key and opened the draw and looked at my panties. I was afraid that he would know if I took a pair so I just left them all there.”

“Will they still be there now?” Jason Bellingham asked.

“I am sure that they are,” Sasha said.

Standing up out of the chair where he had been sitting Jason Bellingham said, “Excuse me I need to go and collect evidence that is going to bury this bastard for a very long time. I will let you know what gives.” With that he walked out of the kitchen and out of the house.

Silence followed Jason Bellingham departure and after a while it was broken by Sasha saying, “Rayleigh explain to me how you can be nude in front of a man and not get raped?”

“Sasha I am going to ask Rayleigh and Jon to do something then maybe you will understand,” Zen said. “Up to this point you have had a horrible experience but that is now past. If you watch the following happenings then you will know that nudity does not mean sex .”

Zen then said, “Rayleigh please strip.”

Rayleigh looked at Zen for a long second and then with the minimum of movements took her Sari off and folded it over the chair. For a moment she stood dressed in loose flesh colour panties. Then she stepped out of them and folded them and placed them on top of her Sari.

Looking at her Prof knew that Sasha was seeing Rayleigh's elongated and half round breast with dark areola and medium size nipples at rest. Her pubic area was covered with dark and thick hair that cover a large part of her pubic area.

Jon waited until Rayleigh was nude then with the minimum of movements dropped his clothes in a heap at his feet. He then walked to stand next to Rayleigh.

Looking at Jon Ces realized that Sasha was seeing a well built tallish boy. He was nicely tanned and looked fit and trim. Prof glanced at Jon's manhood and saw that it was curled up next to his testes resting in a nest of soft curled brownish hair

"Are you sick Jon?" Sasha asked

"No why do you ask that," Jon inquired.

"Well your fucker is not pointing at me. Every time that Shelton came to me his fucker was sticking out in front of him and he fucked me with that. Is that why you cannot fuck a girl is it because your fucker is too soft?" Sasha asked.

"Sasha!" Zen said, "It is only when a man wants to have sex that his manhood or fucker as you call it gets stiff. When a boy is not going to have sex his manhood is at rest

like Jon's is. Jon is not going to have sex with Rayleigh now so his manhood is at rest. If he was going to have sex then his manhood will get ready by stiffening up so that it can enter a woman. Until then a man carries his manhood at rest as Jon's manhood is at rest."

"Oh! I thought that all boys were ready at all times to fuck a girl. That is what Shelton told me," Sasha said.

"Sasha you are going to find that many things that Shelton told you are wrong," Zen said.

"Sasha, Jon and I spend about two three hours a day together in the nude and I have never see his manhood at attention ready for a girl. It has always been like it is now," Petra said. "I have never seen a boy that is ready for sex."

"My brother has raped me so many times and tonight is the first time that I have ever seen a boy in the nude. He used to come to me, Grab me by the hair. Make me pull my jeans and panties off. Then he would drop his jeans and underpants around his knees. Throw me on the ground then push his fucker into me. Then pump me and groan then pull out and then take hold of my panties and wipe himself then pull his underpants and jeans up into position. Then he would wipe my thing with the panties and then sniff at the panties and push them in his pocket. He would then tell me to get dressed and not to say a word or I would die because my father would stitch me up so that I could not do anything and I would swell up and burst," Sasha said in a weepy voice.

"Prof can I please go for a dip," Carline asked. "I feel so dirty just listening what Shelton did to Sasha. I have to

wash it off.”

Ces looked at Zen and saw her nod her head. He then said, “Luckily it is warm so the pool water will be warm. Yes! Those who want too can go for a quick swim.”

“Thank you Prof,” Carline said as she led everyone out of the kitchen. Sasha walked with Petra.

As Ces followed his cell rang. He stopped and looking at the cell saw that it was Jason Bellingham. Saying “Jason” he pressed the speaker phone and at the same time opened the cell so that everyone could hear Jason Bellingham voice.

“Prof!” Jason Bellingham said, “We have hit pay dirt. We found 24 pairs of panties in the draw. They have all been written on as Sasha said they would be. Then all of them have marks on them that look like the remains of fluid on them. I would guess it is seminal or vaginal fluid. We have got the bastard.”

“You are right,” Ces replied. “After raping Sasha he would wipe her with her panties and wipe himself and take the panties as a memorial.”

“Jason the pregnancy test shows that she is not pregnant. Thank the lord for that. Now I am going to give her that good news and then start rebuilding her life. Please do me a favour, throwing the book at the piece of shit.” Prof said.

“Will do,” Jason Bellingham replied adding, “I am thrilled that she is not pregnant. I suppose that her vagina

got pounded and she bled because of that but the body adapted and she stopped bleeding leading her to think that she was pregnant. I think that she will be over the moon. Once again thank you for your help.” Then he closed off the cell.

Prof and Zen then walked to the pool and found everyone in the pool including Sasha and not a bit of clothing was in sight. Without saying a word Zen walked to the pool change room and took hold of a number of towels and brought them out to the side of the pool.

As she walked towards Ces he raised his voice and said, “OK everyone please get out. It’s late and tomorrow is another day.”

Everyone pilled out of the pool and then reluctantly got dressed. After everyone was dressed Zen called them all to come to her. She walked up to Sasha and said, “Sasha as you know Ces is a doctor and he has tested your urine and has some news for you.”

Zen’s words caught Ces off guard but he quickly recovered and said, “Sasha that urine test that was done on your urine has shown that you are not pregnant. I repeat that you are not pregnant.”

Ces’s words were not cold when Carline let out a yell and jumped up and down. Sasha stared at Ces as if he was something out of the world and whispered, “I am not pregnant! I am not pregnant!” She then dissolved in tears.

Later Ces and Zen saw Carline and Rayleigh off after getting a kiss of thanks from both. When they returned to

the house they found Jon busy pumping up the spare blow-up mattress that he was setting up in Petra's room for Sasha to sleep on.

After assuring Sasha once again that she was definitely not pregnant and explaining to her why she stopped bleeding did she begin to believe the fact that she was not pregnant. Ces once again assured her that she would be safe and then everyone settled down for the night.

Early the next morning Zen called Ces to come and see after she had been to check on Sasha. Ces stood with her in the doorway and looked into Petra's room. He had to smile as he saw the view in front of him. Jon was lying between Petra and Sasha. All were dressed in shorty pyjamas and they were lying on the blow-up mattress and a mattress that they had pulled off of Petra's bed.

Zen whispered to Ces that the three of them must be having a wonderful dream by the smiles on their faces.

Chapter 23

Four days later Captain Jason Bellingham asked to see everyone who had been involved in the arrest of Shelton in Prof's office as he wanted to address them.

When everyone was gathered Captain Jason Bellingham said, "Yesterday afternoon the prosecutor and the defence attorney reached a plea bargain agreement. It was decided that Shelton would plead guilty to multiple rape and would then be sentenced to 24 years imprisonment without parole. That is a year on each rape. Unfortunately Sasha your father has stated that you are not welcome to return home. To that end you have been made ward of the court and have been placed in the care of Professor and Mrs. Ces T. Rauts who will be your legal guardian from now on until you reach the age of 21."

Silence followed the announcement and then Sasha began to weep. As first the tears just dribbled down her cheeks and then her whole body began to shake as she wept. Jon reached out and took her in his arms and held her tight.

After a while her sobs became less and she pushed her way out of Jon's arms. She moved to stand next to Captain Bellingham and in a voice that often broke because of the tears said, "The worse time in my life was the first time that I was raped and there was no one to care. Then that continued but some people cared and I was released from that thing. Then I thought that I was pregnant but found out that it was not true. Then I was thrown away by my family but another family took me and made me their daughter. I hated myself but Jon and Petra have taught me

that I am an ordinary girl and that I can leave the past aside. Thank you.”

When Sasha uttered the final words she sunk to the floor weeping. Ces was later to say that before one could blink she was surrounded by all the young people who demonstrated their love for her.

Jason Bellingham walked to stand next to Prof and Zen and said, “That is one girl that will not carry a scar due to her experience. You two have the most magnificent tribe. I have been to see Sasha a few times and each time I have found a normal girl living a normal life amongst her family. Jon and Petra are her guardians. She so fits in with them that if one does not know the hell that she has been through then one would think that she has had a normal life. Meanwhile back at the ranch rape, abuse, family rejection have been part of her life. To me this is a success story. Thank you both so much.”

Three weeks later on a Friday morning Prof looked at everyone getting into the bus to drive to their home village. Mommy Zen and the tribe as well as the newest member of the tribe, Sasha were sitting in the bus. They were joined by all the research assistants who were all over the moon that they were going home to their village. Prof watched as Melody’s Group, as Keera, Robin and Mary called themselves, settled down. He, in passing, noticed that neither Keera nor Robin was wearing their breast prosthesis. Also getting into the bus was the Headman’s sister Ntombi Mgungqu and her husband, Jessie Gurdon together with her two children Nosisa and Yola. Zen had arranged that they ride along as Jessie said once along the village road was enough for any car.

Ces wondered about the weekend. He was going with Zen to take her to be his woman according to the customs of her tribe. He was apprehensive as he did not know what to expect. He had asked Zen what was to happen and her reply had been to kiss him and say, "My darling do not worry about that. When you get there just go with the flow. Remember I love you very much." That answer had not satisfied him but he found out that that was all that he was he was going to hear from her.

Just after the bus started its journey Ces watched Zen go to each person on the bus and talk to them and hand each a plastic bag with something in it. Lastly she came and gave him a plastic bag and said, "My love when we get near the village please put on the items that you find in the bag. It is part of the traditional clothes that we wear at home."

Ces peeped into the bag and saw that there was a beshu as well as cape and a cap made out of Springbok skin in the bag. He asked Zen what was in the other packets and Zen replied saying, "Wait and see."

Nearly four hours later Zen went and spoke to the driver who a while later brought the bus to a stop near a thicket of trees. Addressing everyone Zen said that everyone must make use of the stop to pippie and then all must change into the clothes that were in their packets. She then sent the boys to the trees and when they returned the girls went. After that Zen walked about aiding and assisting everyone to get into their traditional clothes. The four research assistants were excited and thrilled as they pulled on their skirts of their traditional topless clothing. Carline saying that they had once again become village

maidens.

Zen was later to tell Ces that when the girls pulled on their topless traditional dress Carline became Bonggi, Sarah Sesethu, Myola Vivi, and Rayleigh Xanthe.

As Ces wrapped the beshu around his waist and placed the Springbok cape over his shoulders and pull the cap on to become Indoda Makula he glanced around and saw that everyone was getting dressed in traditional clothing. Glancing at the tribe he saw that they were all in traditional dress. Zane was nude except for a single strand of red and white beads around his waist. The twins were dressed in a small bead apron that just covered their area. Around their necks they wore a single strand of red and white beads. Margie wore two small beaded aprons. One that covered her area and the second that covered her bum. Around her neck she wore 2 strands of red and white beads. Petra and Sasha wore a short orange skirt with a black strip around the hem of the skirt. Around the waist they wore a bead belt and had 3 strands of red and white beads around their necks. Jon wore a springbok beshu with a solid back made of a single skin and seven platted strings that covered his manhood in front.

Ces noted that both Marian and Keera were wearing long beaded skirts and a small bodice type of top that covered their breast area. Robin and Mary were also wearing traditional topless dress just like Carline and them. It was obvious that Robin had had her breasts removed.

In passing Ces noted that Ntombi Mgungqu was dressed just like Marian and Keera and that her husband,

Jessie Gurdon was also wearing a Springbok beshu, cape and cap. Her two children were also in traditional dress. Nosisa was dressed like Petra and Sasha while Yola was dressed as Margie was.

Ces noted with interest that Zen was also dressed in the topless traditional dress of Carline and them.

After everyone was dressed Zen and Nososa together went around the bus and checked on all the people to make sure that everyone was correctly dressed.

When the bus stopped at the village the villagers crowded around the bus and as each person descended they were greeted by loud ululate, the praise singing of the village women. Soon after arriving the visitors were taken and paraded before the Headman. He welcomed everyone and then addressed the group in English. Ces caused a sensation when he replied to the Headman first in English and then in the language of the villagers. As he did so he remembered how Zen had made him learn the two speeches off by heart. The reply to the welcome speech and the acceptance speech to be delivered when he accepted Zen as his wife and helpmeet. He had practised the speeches until he was word perfect.

After the welcome the Headman invited Ces to join him while the rest dispersed to other places. Ces later learnt that the group had split up with the children going to be with children of their own age group and the researches going with the unmarried village maidens and Marian, Keera and Ntombi taken off to be with the village matrons. Zen was later to say that a good time was had by all.

Ces and the Headman sat in the shade of the hut and relaxed only talking if and when the mood took them which was not very often. Ces looking out over the village ever now and again saw a member of the tribe but they were so mixed with the villages that it was difficult to know what was going on.

That evening there had been a celebration in the village with dancing and song. The girls under the leadership of Bongi alias Carline once again danced to very loud ululate, the praise singing of the village women. Ces noted that Robin and Mary were added to the dance routine. The headman inquired about Robin's breasts and on hearing what was what stated that she was one of the bravest girls that he had ever known. After the dance he invited the girls to come forward and following Carline the girls bowed before him. He then told Mary to stand up and bestowed the village name of Lumka on her. He then called on Robin to stand up and briefly told the villagers how brave and strong she was. He then bestowed the name Kuhle on her. He explained that the name Kuhle meant the great and brave one. Adding that the bearer of the name was always held in high regard and was highly respected in the village.

When the Headman dismissed the group they immediately danced another traditional dance to loud ululate.

Later that evening Zen and Ces retired to her rondavel to sleep in the Karos. When Ces inquired about the others Zen said that she had organized the tribe in such a manner that they would look after each other under the control of

Marian.

Early the next morning a group of young maidens including Carline and the other of her group invaded the rondavel and grabbed hold of Zen and dragged her shouting and screaming out of the rondavel. Luckily Zen had warned Ces what to expect. She told him how to react and he had jumped up out of Karos and pretended to attempt to stop Zen from being taken away. Ces was later to tell Zen that it was quite a mix-up. As the girls stopped him from getting to Zen they had taken the opportunity to feel him up. He had to admit to himself that he had also made use of the opportunity to feel up a number of girls realizing that it was expected and par for the course.

Later that day the Headman had sent for him and Ces found him ready to walk through the village. As they walked he realized that the Headman was preparing him for the occasion later when he would take Zen to be his according to the culture of the people.

As they walked Ces saw different members of the tribe. He saw Carline and the rest of the girls busy practicing a dance. Zane came running up to him still only dressed in his single strand of beads around his waist. He was accompanied by a number of other boys and girls all dressed in the single strand of beads around his waist. He excitedly told Dad how he was having a nice time and that they were playing nice.

In the distance he had seen Jon, Petra and Sasha sitting with other children of their age busy talking about something that seemed to be very important to them.

My Melody

In passing he had seen Marian, Keera and Ntombi busy helping a group of woman willowing the maize. He was interested to note that the woman were laughing and joking even though they seemed to be working hard.

The Headman led Ces to the cattle kraal where the ceremony was to be held later that day. There without making a scene of it he had explained to Ces what was going to happen and what his roll would be.

Just after three the praise singer walked into the rondavel where Ces was waiting and helped him put his traditional clothing on then led him to the cattle kraal. As he walked into the kraal he was very conscious of the fact that absolute silence seemed to reign. He walked and came to a stop in front of the Headman who nodded at him. As he turned around he saw a group of young boys including Jon chase two bullock into the cattle kraal. They chased the bullocks around the kraal and then out of the gate. Ces knew that they represented the two bullocks that had been slaughtered earlier in the day and that were to be the main meal at the wedding feast.

Suddenly the silence was broken by women's voices that were loudly ululate, the praise singing by the village women. At first the sound was far away but then got louder and louder as the group of women approached the cattle kraal.

Watching Ces saw that in the middle of the group of women a person covered from head to toe by a skin Karos was walking. The woman brought the covered girl into the kraal and then separated and spread out against the walls of the kraal. By doing so they left the covered girl standing

alone in the middle of the kraal entrance. Ces saw that Marian, Keera and Ntombi formed part of the group that stood against the walls of the kraal.

The Headman raised his voice and loudly called the girl to come closer. Slowly the girl made her way towards the sound of the voice. Then from all around edge of the kraal the woman began to ululate the praise singing by the village women. Ces saw Zen come to a halt as she tried to hear the voice of the Headman calling her.

For what seemed forever Zen moving slowly moved towards the Headman and Ces. When she got close she sunk onto her knees and put her head on the ground. As she did that the women suddenly stopped ululate the praise singing by the village women. When that happened the Headman stopped speaking.

After a moments silence Zen raised her voice and Ces knew that she was asking permission to be joined to Indoda Makula. The Headman then addressed Ces and inquired if he would take the woman to be his woman. Ces immediately replied speaking the language of the village fluently. His action caused a shock wave to pass through the community as everyone knew that Indoda Makula was not able to speak their language. Without hesitation or a mistake Ces was able to recite the words that Zen had taught him off by heart informing everyone that he wanted to take the woman as his woman.

His reply caused Zen to crawl towards his voice and she stopped at his feet. Ces bent down and taking hold of the Karos covering Zen pulled it off of her and threw it in a heap on his right hand. He then reached down and pulled

Zen upright onto her feet. As she moved to stand behind him with head bowed looking down at the ground Ces took in the fact that Zen was for all intense and purposes nude. She was wearing a single strand of red and white beads around her neck. The only bit of clothing that she was wearing was a small material and bead apron that just covered her womanhood.

Ces was aware of how proudly Zen stood before him. Although she was not looking at him he knew that she was over the moon with excitement. Acting according to the tradition of the culture Ces removed his Springbok cape and stepped up to Zen and placed it on her shoulders and so signified that he was willing to take responsibility for caring for her. His action led to an intensive period of ululate the praise singing by the village women.

Ces then took hold of Zen shoulders and turned her around and made her look towards the entrance of the kraal. As the two of them looked at the kraal gate the tribe began to walk towards them led by Jessie Gurdon wearing his Springbok traditional clothing with Jon dressed in his beshu walking next to him. Behind them everyone who had travelled in the bus was walking all dressed in their traditional village dress. Jessie Gurdon led the group to come and stand before Indoda Makula, Ces village name.

Ces and Zen turned and faced the Headman. As he spoke Zen softly translated so that Ces knew what was going on. The Headman then called Jessie Gurdon, Marian, Keera, Robin, Mary and Jon to come and stand in front of him. When the group that he had summoned stood in front of him the Headman said that the people were accepted as a total part of the village and therefore had to have village

names he then gave each one a village name. Jessie Gurdon became Xolani, Marian Sibajle, Keera Phiwokuhle, and Jon Sange. He then added that he had already named Mary who had become Lumka and Robin who because of her bravery had become Kuhle.

The Headman then told the newly named people to return to their place. The Headman then stated that it was Indoda Makula task and function to give each child a village name in the near future.

The Headman then addressed Indoda Makula and tasked him with the care and love for Thandiswa, his woman. Addressing Zen or Thandiswa the Headman tasked her with the care and love of Indoda Makula.

The Headman then caused the village to go into raptures of joy and excitement when he announced that he had decided that to create a village subsection. He then said that the village subsection would be based in the city and that Indoda Makula would be its head.

When Zen translated what the Headman had said Ces stared at him in surprise and shock. Hearing Zen's urgent whisper that he was to kneel before the Headman and nod his head thereby signifying that he accepted the honour bestowed on him Ces did as Zen suggested.

In reaction to his action the Headman stated that the village subsection had been created. The announcement led to loud ululate, the praise singing by the village women.

The Headman held up his hand and as he spoke Zen softly translated for Ces. The Headman called Sange to come and stand in front of him. Luckily for Jon Carline

prodded him and sent him to the front. Jon came and stood in front of the Headman and reacting to Zen's whispered Jon stood looking at the ground.

Speaking in English the Headman said, "Sange you are the successor to Indoda Makula position. It is therefore vital that you be trained in the way and culture of our village. There is no one better to teach a young boy than a girl of his age. It is therefore with pleasure that I instruct Kaira to come and be your instructor in all the traditional things of the village.

As he spoke a slim girl dressed in her topless traditional dress showing her fairly large neat pubic breasts walked towards Jon and came and stood behind him. Acting on Zen's whispered instructions Jon turned around and greeted Kaira. She responded to the greeting by curtsying to Jon and then moved to stand next to him.

The Headman then dismissed the two with instructions that Kaira teach Sange all the traditions of his village.

When the bus left the following day to return to the city Kaira was on board. Zen had found out that she was an orphan who stayed with a family friend her parents having succumbed to AIDS. When Zen found that out she arranged that Kaira move in with them. Ces had said that Jon would have his hands full with Petra, Sasha and Kaira all wanting his attention. With a smile he added Jon would have to become a Mormon then he could have all three girls.

Much to the pleasure of the women of the village the Headman dismissed everyone to enjoy the wedding feast.

Ces was to say that the village feast seemed to last forever.

Later that evening Carline and the other girls, as well as Marian, and Keera all gathered around Ces and Zen. After the congratulations were given the group sat in comfortable silence. Then Keera said, “None of us would be here if it was not for Melody. We all started as a group of individuals. Then Prof appointed the four research assistants. Prof took them out to teach them all about breasts. Melody and we got involved in the teaching side to teach the girls what breasts are. Then I am led to believe because of Melody’s choice Prof and Zen spent a lot of time together. This led to certain people realizing that the other was a fantastic person. A little bird whispered in my ear that Melody sort of pushed Prof and Zen towards each other and bingo here we are today celebrating a traditional wedding and the start of a new subsection of the village in the city.”

With a sigh Zen said, “When Melody found out that Prof and I were to connect she said that she would not be able to be here today in body. But she promised that she would be here in spirit. Therefore let me say welcome to Melody in spirit and ask her to keep her hands around Prof and me so we can together with you all work to prevent other women from having to making Melody’s choice.

People and Places in My Melody

Aniline Professor Ces T. Rauts twin daughter twin with Anilies age eight

Anilies Professor Ces T. Rauts twin daughter twin with Aniline age eight

Ann The woman Melody chose to marry
David

ANR Adult Nursing Relationship

Avontur A camp site where a training camp was held by Prof for the girls in his department.

Betz Captain Jason Bellingham wife she was a professional photographer who photographed the wedding.

Bianca she told Robin that Snigger had committed suicide in his car by the dam.

Bongi is Carline village name

Breast International A International breast cancer research unit that funds Prof's breast cancer research.

Blake Fryer The boy groped Robin Castle and Mary Shell and caused them breast injuries.

Blonde Professor Ces T. Rauts sister Marina

Booby tray. It was a tray that consisted of a towel, a tape measure, a micrometer, a pair of sterile gloves, swabs and gauze, Tegaderm to stick the dressings to the skin, and two empty kidney dishes.

Brinson Senior Secondary High School where Melody and David taught. She History and he Geography to grades 10 to 12

Carline Sinclair coloured breast cancer research assistant

Captain Jason Bellingham whose wife was a patient of Prof's. He was in charge of the child abuse unit.

Cherie Professor Ces T. Rauts filing clerk.

David Reuters Melody's husband

Denton Carver From Last Rest Funeral Services with

who Melody had arranged what was to happen to her after her death.

Daily Information the local daily newspaper, that covered the story of the serial groper at the high school

Doctor Andy Terry Who is regarded as the best obstetrician that Professor Ces T. Rauts knew.

Doctor Antony Fallen Melody's private doctor.

Doctor Dylan Maxton the radiologist

Doctor Joshua Putter who referred Ms. Keera Scott to Prof for a double mastectomy

Dodd Marian's husband who was killed in a accident

Dr. Denton asked Prof to help when a man tried to amputate a girls breast.

Ellsworth High where Jenkins was the principal and Robin Castle a learner

Emma waitress at Avontur

Fanny the name Zen gave her womanhood

Fibroadenoma a benign (not cancerous) breast tumour that is made of glandular and fibrous breast tissue

Fryer, David and Malls the law firm where Mr. Fryer the father of Blake is the senior partner

Georgia," the girl who asked Prof why is it that boy's are breast mad

Glory Community Church where Pastor Charles Kridiotis gets Rayleigh Naidoo to be a research assistant

Grace Community Church where Pastor Denis Mouton gets Sarah How to be a research assistant

Herman and Grant the law firm that took statements from the girls that had been groped by Blake.

Highway Community Church the church Prof approached to get the research assistants. Pastor David Dillon was there.

My Melody

Indoda Makula is Prof's village name

Janice Keera Scott, who wants a double mastectomy, sister who has been diagnosed with breast cancer.

Jenkins. Principal Ellsworth High. Nicknamed by learners and called Sniggers

Jessie Gurdon, Ntombi Mgungqu husband was a chartered accountant who owned a very successful business.

Jon Professor Ces T. Rauts sixteen year eldest son

Kaira The village girl tasked with teaching Sange, Jon, the way of the villages

Kate waitress at Avontur

Keera Scott wants a double mastectomy mother and two sisters, Lea and Janice have been diagnosed with breast cancer.

Kenny Cozad One of the girls who had made a sworn statement about being groped by Blake.

King's Community Church where Pastor Steve George gets Carline Sinclair to be a research assistant

Kuhle is Robin's village name. The name meant the great and brave one

Last Rest Funeral Services with who Melody had arranged what was to happen to her after her death. Denton Carver was the person who would organized it.

Lea Keera Scott who wants a double mastectomy sister, who died of breast cancer.

Lumka is Mary's village name

Lynn waitress at Avontur

Major E Bates of the Salvation Army who married Ces and Zen

Maldon Community Church where Pastor Zola Amos gets Myola Monod to be a research assistant

Marc a Avontur guide

Margie Professor Ces T. Rauts ten year old daughter

Marian Prof's sister who he also calls the Blonde who stepped in and looks after Prof's children after his wife Mary-Louse was killed in a bus accident. In the same accident Marian's husband Dodd was also killed.

Mary-Louse Prof's wife who was killed in a bus accident

Mary Shell reported to the school principal that Blake Flyer had groped her

Maybes Lake A lake where Ces and Zen take the children for a picnic.

Metter University where the headman of Zen's village studied

Melody Reuters 32 year old 4 months pregnant and diagnosed with stage 3 breast cancer

Melody-Ann The baby born to Melody

Mr. Field Robin's history teacher

Mr. Fryer Senior partner of Fryer, David and Malls and Blake's father He is also chairman of the PTA

Mr. Marais the headmaster of Saxon Primary

Mr. Westgate the deputy principal who was acting principal in Jenkins place

Mrs Bellingham a patient of Prof whose husband Jason was in charge of the child abuse unit.

Mrs. Emmanuel was extremely angry that her appointment was three hours late

Mrs. Julie Bain a teacher at Saxon Primary the twins are in her class

Ms. Castle Robin's mother

Ms. Mary Shell the mother of Mary Shell who had been

My Melody

groped by Blake at school

Myola Monod Black breast cancer research assistant

Nosisa the daughter of Ntombi Mgungqu and her husband, Jessie Gurdon

Ntombi Mgungqu Zen fathers sister that had been banished from the village

Old Mac The principal at the school where Melody teaches

Pastor Charles Kridiotis of Glory Community Church who gets Rayleigh Naidoo to be a research assistant

Pastor David Dillon Highway Community Church helps to organize the research assistants;

Pastor Denis Mouton of Grace Community Church who gets Sarah How to be a research assistant

Pastor Steve George of King's Community Church who gets Carline Sinclair to be a research assistant

Pastor Zola Amos of Maldon Community Church who gets Myola Monod to be a research assistant

Petra Professor Ces T. Rauts thirteen year old daughter

Phiwokuhle is Keera village name

Phyllis Professor Ces T. Rauts receptionist

Professor Ces T. Rauts the person around whom the story rotates

Professor FAT Professor François Antoine Thompson CEO Breast International

Rayleigh Naidoo Indian breast cancer research assistant

Research assistants Myola Monod Black; Sarah Howe white; Carline Sinclair coloured; Rayleigh Naidoo Indian

Robin Castle 18 years old and having breast cancer who Prof operated on.

Sange is Jon village name

Cecil R

Sarah Howe white breast cancer research assistant
Sasha Naidoo a girl that was repeatedly raped by her
brother and who thought that she was pregnant.

Saxon Primary Where four of Professor Ces T. Rauts
six children are at school

SBE is self breast examination

Sesethu is Sarah's village name

Shelton Sasha brother who raped her

Sibajle is Marian village name

Sister Agnes-May The nun that taught Carline to do
self breast examination when she was in grade ten.

Snigger is principal Jenkins nickname

Thandiswa Zen birth name used in her village

Taren The boy from Robin's class who asked
questions

Tonia Profs Nurse assistant who worked with him
but who had tendered her resignation

Ululate The praise singing of the village women

Venus of Willendorf had ample hips and very large
breasts

Vivi is Myola village name

Winkie The name that Zen called Prof's manhood

Xanthe is Rayleigh village name

Xolani is Jessie Gurdon village name

Yola the daughter of Ntombi Mgungqu and her
husband, Jessie Gurdon

Yolani is Mary village name

Zane Professor Ces T. Rauts last born son 5

Zen Mofu Professional nurse working with
Professor Ces T. Rauts and he marries her

Professor Ces T. Rauts is head of the breast cancer research at the local university. Due to his policy of never ever examining a woman without a another woman being present he is always accompanied by his professional nurse Zen Mafu.

Breast International a international organization awarded research funds to Prof. That leads to the appointment of four research assistants who Prof has to train in breast research.

The whole department gets involved in the life of Melody Reuters who is 32 year old and is 4 months pregnant when she is diagnosed with Stage III breast cancer. Prof has to give Melody the choice that she must decide whether to have treatment and abort the baby or not receive treatment resulting in the fact that the baby will live but that the breast cancer will kill her. Melody says that she had lived for 32 years while her baby has not lived and so she refuses treatment.

The story follows all the members of the breast cancer research unit as they interact with Melody and what effect her situation had on the lives of all the members. This also allows the members to examine their own ideas about their breasts and their reaction to the task and function that they have to carry out. A story that makes one examine their own reaction when presented with difficult choices.



This is a legally distributed free edition from
www.obooko.com

The author's intellectual property rights are protected by international Copyright law. You are licensed to use this digital copy strictly for your personal enjoyment only: it must not be redistributed commercially or offered for sale in any form.